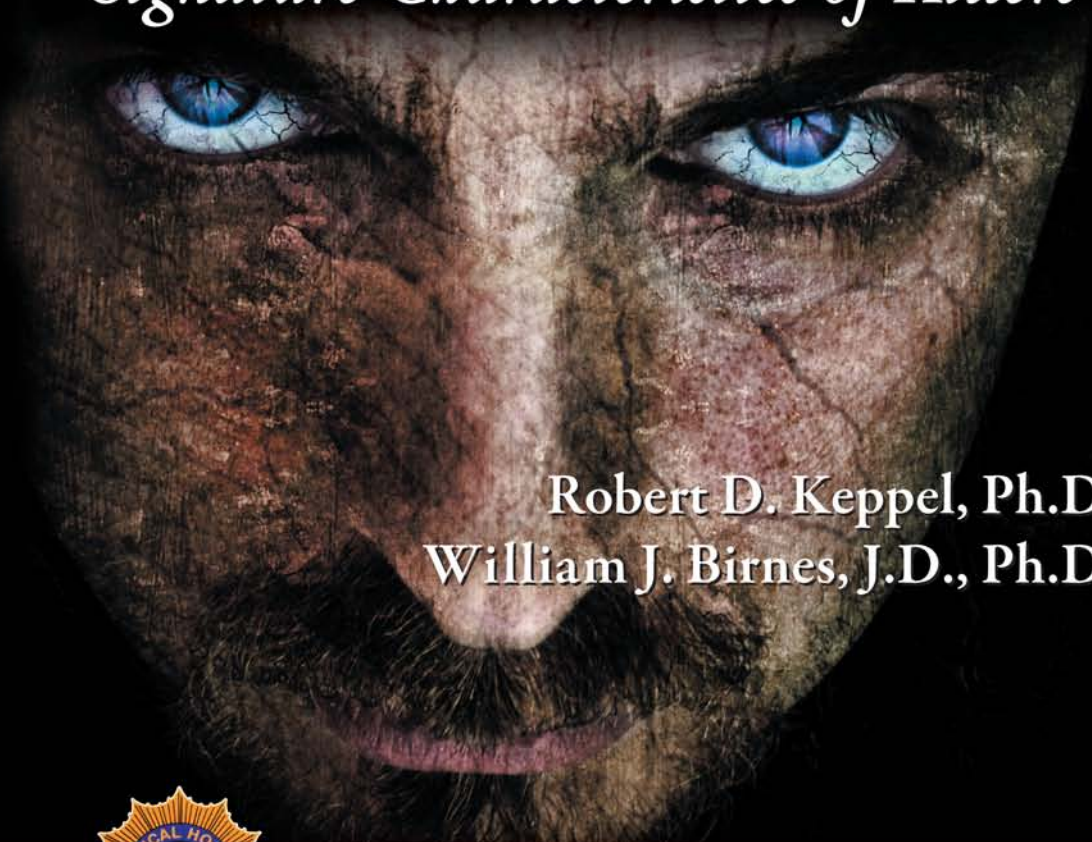
Serial Violence

Analysis of Modus Operandi and Signature Characteristics of Killers



Robert D. Keppel, Ph.D.
William J. Birnes, J.D., Ph.D.

Practical Aspects of Criminal and Forensic Investigations Series

CRC Press
Taylor & Francis Group

Serial Violence

Analysis of Modus Operandi and Signature Characteristics of Killers

CRC SERIES IN
PRACTICAL ASPECTS OF CRIMINAL AND FORENSIC INVESTIGATIONS

VERNON J. GEBERTH, BBA, MPS, FBINA *Series Editor*

Practical Homicide Investigation: Tactics, Procedures, and Forensic Techniques, Fourth Edition
Vernon J. Geberth

The Counterterrorism Handbook: Tactics, Procedures, and Techniques, Third Edition
Frank Bolz, Jr., Kenneth J. Dudonis, and David P. Schulz

Forensic Pathology, Second Edition
Dominick J. Di Maio and Vincent J. M. Di Maio

Interpretation of Bloodstain Evidence at Crime Scenes, Second Edition
William G. Eckert and Stuart H. James

Tire Imprint Evidence
Peter McDonald

Practical Drug Enforcement, Third Edition
Michael D. Lyman

Practical Aspects of Rape Investigation: A Multidisciplinary Approach, Fourth Edition
Robert R. Hazelwood and Ann Wolbert Burgess

The Sexual Exploitation of Children: A Practical Guide to Assessment, Investigation, and Intervention, Second Edition
Seth L. Goldstein

Gunshot Wounds: Practical Aspects of Firearms, Ballistics, and Forensic Techniques, Second Edition
Vincent J. M. Di Maio

Friction Ridge Skin: Comparison and Identification of Fingerprints
James F. Cowger

Footwear Impression Evidence: Detection, Recovery and Examination, Second Edition
William J. Bodziak

Principles of Kinesic Interview and Interrogation, Second Edition
Stan Walters

Practical Fire and Arson Investigation, Second Edition
David R. Redsicker and John J. O'Connor

The Practical Methodology of Forensic Photography, Second Edition
David R. Redsicker

Practical Aspects of Interview and Interrogation, Second Edition
David E. Zulawski and Douglas E. Wicklander

Serial Violence

Analysis of Modus Operandi and Signature Characteristics of Killers

Robert D. Keppel, Ph.D.
William J. Birnes, J.D., Ph.D.

CRC Press
Taylor & Francis Group
Boca Raton London New York

CRC Press is an imprint of the
Taylor & Francis Group, an **informa** business

CRC Press
Taylor & Francis Group
6000 Broken Sound Parkway NW, Suite 300
Boca Raton, FL 33487-2742

© 2009 by Taylor & Francis Group, LLC
CRC Press is an imprint of Taylor & Francis Group, an Informa business

No claim to original U.S. Government works
Printed in the United States of America on acid-free paper
10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

International Standard Book Number-13: 978-1-4200-6632-6 (Hardcover)

This book contains information obtained from authentic and highly regarded sources. Reasonable efforts have been made to publish reliable data and information, but the author and publisher cannot assume responsibility for the validity of all materials or the consequences of their use. The authors and publishers have attempted to trace the copyright holders of all material reproduced in this publication and apologize to copyright holders if permission to publish in this form has not been obtained. If any copyright material has not been acknowledged please write and let us know so we may rectify in any future reprint.

Except as permitted under U.S. Copyright Law, no part of this book may be reprinted, reproduced, transmitted, or utilized in any form by any electronic, mechanical, or other means, now known or hereafter invented, including photocopying, microfilming, and recording, or in any information storage or retrieval system, without written permission from the publishers.

For permission to photocopy or use material electronically from this work, please access www.copyright.com (http://www.copyright.com/) or contact the Copyright Clearance Center, Inc. (CCC), 222 Rosewood Drive, Danvers, MA 01923, 978-750-8400. CCC is a not-for-profit organization that provides licenses and registration for a variety of users. For organizations that have been granted a photocopy license by the CCC, a separate system of payment has been arranged.

Trademark Notice: Product or corporate names may be trademarks or registered trademarks, and are used only for identification and explanation without intent to infringe.

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data

Keppel, Robert D.
Serial violence : analysis of modus operandi and signature characteristics of killers / Robert D. Keppel, William J. Birnes.
p. cm. -- (CRC series in practical aspects of criminal and forensic investigations)
Includes bibliographical references and index.
ISBN 978-1-4200-6632-6 (hardcover : alk. paper)
1. Serial murderers--Psychology. 2. Criminal methods. 3. Serial murder investigation. 4. Serial murders. I. Birnes, William J. II. Title. III. Series.

HV6515.K397 2009
364.152'32--dc22 2008044204

Visit the Taylor & Francis Web site at
http://www.taylorandfrancis.com

and the CRC Press Web site at
http://www.crcpress.com

Table of Contents

Series Editor's Note xi
Introduction xiii
About the Authors xvii

1 The Components of Modus Operandi, Ritual, and Signature 1

Introduction 1
Historical Perspective 2
Methodology for M.O. and Signature Analysis 4
Definition of Modus Operandi and the Characteristics of an Offender's Method of Operation 4
Ritualistic Behaviors in Crimes 7
Observations Regarding M.O. and Ritual 8
Non-Ritualistic Characteristics Used to Link Cases 9
Offender's Signature 10
Summary 11
References 12

2 The Discovery of Signature: Harvey Glatman, the Lonely Hearts Killer, William Heirens—"Stop Me Before I Kill Again!"—and Morris Frampton 15

Introduction 15
"Lonely Hearts Killer" and the Murder of Shirley Bridgeford 16
Abduction and Murder of Ruth Mercado 18
Arrest of Harvey Glatman 20
Lipstick Murderer 22
Sir Arthur Conan Doyle 23
Communication between Investigators: Morris Frampton Murders 24
Murder of Rosemary Stuart at the South Park Marina 25
Murder of Iantha Buchanan 28
Signature Analysis in the Buchanan and Stuart Cases 30
Catching the Killer 32
References 36

3 The Jack the Ripper Murders: A Modus Operandi and Signature Analyses of the 1888–1891 Whitechapel Murders 39

ROBERT D. KEPPEL, JOSEPH G. WEIS, KATHERINE M. BROWN, AND KRISTEN WELCH

Introduction 39
Background 40
Details of the Emma Elizabeth Smith Case 41
Details of the Martha Tabram Case 42
Details of the Mary Ann Nichols Case 43
Details of the Annie Chapman Case 45
Details of the Elizabeth Gustafsdotter Stride Case 47
Details of the Catherine Eddowes Case 48
Details of the Mary Jane Kelly Case 50
Details of the Rose Mylett Case 51
Details of the Alice McKenzie Case 52
Details of the Unknown Woman Case 53
Details of the Frances Coles Case 54
Crime Scene Characteristics and Assessment 54
Modus Operandi Characteristics 56
Signature Characteristics 57
Signature Analysis 57
HITS Analysis 59
Discussion 61
Summary 62
References 63

4 The Essence of Torture 65

Introduction 65
Richard Cottingham Murders 66
Murder of Maryann Carr 66
Attempted Murder of Karen Schilt 67
Susan Geiger 69
Deedah Goodzari and Jane Doe: The Mystery of the Headless Torsos 71
Murder of Valerie Ann Street 74
Murders at the Hotel Seville 75
Attempted Murder of Leslie Ann O'Dell 76
Evidence against Cottingham 78
Similarity of Cases as Argued by the Prosecutor 85
Killer's Signature 88
References 95

5 Signature Analysis Convicts the Right Man 97

Introduction 97
Timothy Spencer Cases 98
Debbie Dudley Davis 99
Dr. Susan Hellams 101
Diane Cho 105
Susan Tucker 107
Connecting Spencer to the Murders 109
Modus Operandi 111
Signature Aspects of the Four Murders 112
Spencer's Signature 113
References 116

6 The Picquerism Signature 119

Clairemont Killer 119
Murder of Tiffany Schultz 119
Murder of Janene Marie Weinhold 122
Murder of Holly Tarr 124
Murder of Elissa Keller 126
Murders of Pamela and Amber Clark 129
Signature Analysis 131
Evidence against Cleophus Prince 135
References 137

7 A Sexual Assault Signature Lacking Primary Mechanisms 139

Steven Pennell Cases 139
Murder of Shirley Annette Ellis 139
Analysis of the Shirley Ellis Murder 142
Murder of Catherine Ann DiMauro 143
Police Take the Offensive 145
Missing Person Kathleen Anne Meyer 146
Murder of Michelle Ann Gordon 147
Appeal Attacks the Signature Testimony 150
Pathological Approach to the Killer's M.O. and Signature 153
References 158

8 The Ritual of Sexual Degradation through Posing of Victims 159

Introduction 159

Staging of a Murder Scene 160
Posed Scenes for Sexual Degradation Purposes 164
Mary Ann Pohlreich Murder 164
Carol Beethe Murder 168
Andrea Levine Murder 170
The Killer's Signature 171
Arrest of George Russell (Keppel and Birnes, 1997) 174
The Homicide Investigation and Tracking System 176
George Russell's Appeal to the Washington Supreme Court 177
References 184

9 What's Important Is What's Not There 185

Introduction 185
Details of the Murders 186
Details of the Denean Worms Murder Case 187
Murder of Brenda Hughes 189
Signature Analyses 190
HITS Data Search 193
Discussion 194
References 195

10 Signature Left in Kansas City 197

Carol Shields 197
Sara Andrasek 199
Modus Operandi 201
Signature Analyses 201

11 Signature of an Arson-Rape-Murderer 203

Introduction—The Shoreline Murders 203
Renee Powell 203
Barbara Walsh 205
Signature of Robert Parker 208
Defense Expert's Opinion 209
HITS Statistical Analysis 210
Catching the Killer 210
References 212

12 The Definitive Signature of a Rapist and Murderer 213

Introduction 213
January 23, 1981 (Rape) 213

November 11, 1981 (Rape) 215
December 7, 1981 (Rape) 216
December 8, 1981, 11:00 A.M. (Rape) 218
January 14, 1982 (Rape) 218
January 21, 1982 (Murder) 219
Signature Analysis 219
Specialized Victim Selection 220
Surprising and Intimidating Approach to Victims 220
Aggressive Clothing Removal 220
Co-Opting Victims' Compliance by Threats and Assault 220
The Rapist Undoing His Own Clothing 221
The Need for Sexual Intercourse or Substitute Sexual Activity 221
Giving the Victims Verbal Intimidating Commands or Language 221
Victims Left in Sexually Degrading Positions 221
Murder Case 222
References 222

13 Best Practices in Linking Cases 223

Court Testimony Regarding Linking Cases 223
References 225

Index 227

Series Editor's Note

This book is part of a series entitled *Practical Aspects of Criminal and Forensic Investigation*. This series was created by Vernon J. Geberth, New York City Police Department Lieutenant Commander (Retired), who is an author, educator, and consultant on homicide and forensic investigations. This series, written by authors who are nationally recognized experts in their respective fields, has been designed to provide contemporary, comprehensive, and pragmatic information to the practitioner involved in criminal and forensic investigations.

Introduction

"The signature aspect of a violent criminal offender," wrote Vernon Geberth in his book *Practical Homicide Investigation*, "is a unique and integral part of the offender's behavior. This signature component refers to the psychodynamics, which are the mental and emotional processes underlying human behavior and its motivations. Likewise, from an investigative perspective, it is important to note that an offender's M.O. or 'method of doing things' is a learned behavior and tends to remain constant."

Because *Serial Killers: The Practical Analyses of Signature and Modus Operandi* is a textbook about linking murder cases together, it contains next to nothing about criminal profiling. There is little written about the actual steps and procedures of linking cases by the presence of modus operandi (M.O.) and signature characteristics. A number of profilers, from John Douglas to David Canter, have written or co-written books or memoirs highlighting their profiling careers, which have included efforts at linking cases. The initial book undertaken was Robert Ressler's *Whoever Fights Monsters* (1992), followed by David Canter's *Criminal Shadows* (1994). Not long after, John Douglas' *Mindhunter* (1995), Robert Keppel's *The Riverman* (1995), Russell Vorpegal's *Profiles in Murder* (1998), Roy Hazelwood's *The Evil That Men Do* (1998), and Gregg McCrary's *The Unknown Darkness* (2003) arrived, which mentioned information about linking cases, not from a scientific or instructional viewpoint toward performing linkage analysis but more resembling works for true crime-genre enthusiasts.

Although the function of linking cases and subsequent testimony in criminal prosecutions has typically been performed by FBI criminal profilers or by professional police investigators they have trained, this textbook is not an explanation of how to perform the task of developing offender characteristics from crime scene behaviors, the normal criminal profilers' purview. Taken alone, linking cases involves a specific methodology beyond profiling and has been thoroughly scrutinized by supreme courts, but never comprehensively covered in any book or journal article. That is the effort of this text: to fully explain the process of linking one violent crime to another for the purpose of pursuing the same offender or for trial purposes. The definitive text on criminal profiling can wait.

These pages tell, instead, the story of the procedures that have been employed to functionally link violent crimes to anyone who is seriously

concerned about the course of criminal investigations. This is a work about what experts have been able to perform in previous cases; it explains how their opinions and work have survived appropriate appellate review.

The first chapter offers an account of how information about M.O. and signature analysis became known historically. The emphasis here is on the short history of the beginnings of using M.O. during the early 1890s in the United States in civil suits involving the law of patents, and in the late 1890s in England tracking criminals. In this chapter, the working definitions of the terms modus operandi, ritual behaviors, non-ritual behaviors, and signature crimes are established and examples of all four crime scene behaviors are provided. Within this particular framework, the known publications, testimonies, and M.O. information systems are discussed and evaluated.

The heart of this book examines the work of signature analysts in detail, and explains the process outside the critical stereotypes in mystery books, movies, and documentaries that has grown up in the last 20 years. Each chapter covers a specific signature killer and provides details of ritualistic and non-ritualistic linking characteristics that were established. The chapters reveal, upon close analysis, the various cases that have used signature testimony to link cases for courtroom purposes. In addition, the scientific structure of the signature of each particular violent criminal offender is explained.

Chapter 2 covers the discovery of murderous ritualistic behaviors in the notable cases of William Heirens (1945) in Chicago, Harvey Glatman (1958) in California, and Morris Frampton (1977) in Seattle, which occurred prior to known testimony on linking cases in court. These cases, among others, began the interest in understanding the importance of the M.O. and ritualistic characteristics of killers to the investigative process. Although actual M.O. and signature analyses were not performed as we know them today, understanding of the elements of the ritualistic behaviors helped solve these investigations in these regionally famous cases. For example, the crimes of Morris Frampton highlighted the communication level of linkage analysis, informing detectives that they could be searching for the same offender in two murders. The linkage of these murders was the major reason the crimes were solved. The linkage of these murders committed two weeks apart united detectives from the King County Sheriff's Office and the Seattle Police Department. A parallel and team-oriented investigation was undertaken, thereby enabling the killer to be quickly apprehended.

Chapter 3 covers an article in its entirety written by Robert Keppel, Joseph Weis, Kathrine Brown, and Kristen Welch for the *Journal of Investigative Psychology and Offender Profiling* in 2005. It reveals the signature aspects of the infamous Jack-the-Ripper murders in 1888 to 1891 in central London. A number of women, commonly recognized as 11 victims, were murdered in separate events in the Whitechapel area of London. An evaluation of the murders using M.O. and signature analytic procedures revealed that six of

those murders were linked by a number of distinct personal signature characteristics, including picquerism, overkill, incapacitation, domination and control, open and displayed unusual body position, sexual degradation, mutilation, organ harvesting, specific areas of attack, preplanning and organization, and a combination of signature features that are also covered in the chapters that follow as part of the various components of additional serial killers' signatures.

Chapter 4 examines the essence of torture by describing and documenting the attempted and actual murders by Richard Cottingham in New York and New Jersey. Torture has been identified as a recognizable crime scene behavior of serial killers and rapists. The implements used by Cottingham to torture his victims differentiated his types of torture and individualized his behavior from other sexually sadistic offenders.

Chapter 5 covers the burglary murders of Timothy Spencer in the Richmond, Virginia area. The wrong man, David Vasquez, was initially arrested and convicted of a murder that was later connected to a series of murders committed by another man. That man was Timothy Spencer. Spencer's crimes were rape–murders of female victims, who were found in their own residences. Spencer proved he was a crafty cat-burglar, which reflected one element of his anger–retaliatory signature.

Chapter 6 identifies a picquerism signature that helped in the convictions of the cases of the Clairmont killer, Cleophus Prince. The signature testimony was crucial in connecting the murders of athletic women at trial. The multiple stabbings victims in certain areas of concentration and using primary sexual mechanisms as crime scene behaviors were major components of this killer's signature. The crimes of the Clairmont killer held the entire city of San Diego at bay in the early months of 1990.

Chapter 7 examines a serial killer's signature that is missing the primary sexual mechanisms of penile penetration and ejaculation. The details that led to the connection of the US Route 40 murders and to the arrest of Steven Pennell in Delaware are covered. The trial of Steven Pennell and the testimony of FBI Agent John Douglas highlighted the first use of M.O. and signature testimony by anyone at a trial.

Chapter 8 covers an anger–excitation signature that uses the symbolic intent of posing victims to accomplish sexual degradation. Through the grotesque placement of his victims, George Russell left victims in positions that would shock and repulse the finder and the police. Within 67 days and 5 miles of each of three murders, the city of Bellevue, Washington experienced atypical murders, unlike any experienced in previous years in its history. It was the signature testimony that linked the cases through the major signature elements of posing, open and display, and sexual insertion of a foreign object that enabled prosecutors to convict George Russell of three murders.

Chapter 9 examines the absence of beating, strangling, and physical elements of torture in the 1984 Cranbrook murders in British Columbia. This chapter highlights the importance of examining what is there, and, of equal importance is to examine what is not there. When a serial killer uses a .410 shotgun to murder his victims, it is truly a rare event. After the defendant won his appeal on one murder count, the Crown Counsel used M.O. and signature analysis for the first time in a Canadian murder series to connect cases and, ultimately, to convict the killer of two women.

Chapter 10 examines the two murders of Wayne Dumond in Kansas City, Missouri in 1995. When authorities charged Dumond with one murder, they felt he had committed others, but he remained silent about any others. A search for similar murders in the Kansas City area uncovered another victim. M.O. and signature analyses were performed, connecting Dumond to that second murder. Dumond could not be tried for the second murder because he committed suicide in jail.

Chapter 11 covers the signature killer, Robert Parker, the Shoreline Killer in King County, Washington. He murdered two women, 30 days apart, who lived in the same apartment complex in the Ballinger Terrace area. Unique features of Parker's signature were that he entered occupied apartments, and, eventually, after his anger–retaliatory behaviors occurred, he set fires, one of which was located between the legs of both victims in both apartments.

Chapter 12 covers five rapes and one murder committed by Wesley Miller from Ft. Worth, Texas. Miller had a distinctive approach to his victims in that all were cheerleaders from the same high school. Finally, after the rape of five victims, he murdered the sixth. All of these cases were connected through M.O. and signature analysis for the purposes of his civil commitment procedures in Texas.

Best practices in M.O. and signature analyses are found in Chapter 13. It is the defining chapter in that it explains the differences between signature analysis and criminal profiling. Signature analysis is not meant to resemble criminal profiling. It was built upon a concept quite different from that of profiling. Signature analysis occupies a different position within crime assessment. This book was not meant to highlight the demographic and behavioral characteristics of the unknown offender from crime scene characteristics, but to highlight what M.O. and ritualistic behaviors link cases to the same offender. At the present time, it is impossible to describe the process of M.O. and signature analyses without considering expert testimony and appellate decisions influencing future signature testimonies. This text highlights recommended qualifications of the signature analyst. It is about the special—and multiple—talents of the signature analyst.

Robert D. Keppel

About the Authors

Robert D. Keppel, Ph.D. is an associate professor in the Henry C. Lee School of Criminal Justice and Forensic Science at the University of New Haven. For 2 years, he was a visiting associate professor of Criminal Justice at Seattle University. He spent 2 years as an associate professor at Sam Houston State University. He retired after 17 years as the Chief Criminal Investigator with the Washington State Attorney General's Office. He has more than 29 years of homicide investigation experience.

Among his many homicide investigation experiences, he has been a consultant to the Atlanta Police on the Missing and Murdered Children's Cases, a member of the national planning committee for the Violent Criminal Apprehension Program (VICAP), and a consultant to the Green River Murders Task Force, Seattle, Washington. He also served as a consultant to the El Paso Police Department in the Desert Area Serial Murders in Texas, the Austin Police Department in the Yogurt Shop Murders, the Jefferson Parish Sheriff's Department in the New Orleans area prostitute murders, the Santa Barbara Sheriff's Office in the Nightstalker murder cases in California, and to the Oregon State Police in the Randy Kraft Murders in Oregon.

Dr. Keppel is the founder of the Washington State Homicide Investigation and Tracking System (HITS), which set the benchmark for how police handle information in support of homicide investigations. He was the project director for a federal grant from the Bureau of Justice Assistance (BJA) entitled, "Managing Investigative Technologies," which was completed in 2002. He was the project director for an Office of Juvenile Justice and Delinquency Prevention (OJJDP) grant entitled, "Investigative Case Management for Missing Children Homicides," which was completed in 1997. He was the project director for a National Institute of Justice (NIJ) Grant entitled, "Improving the Investigation of Homicide and the Apprehension Rate of Murderers," which was completed in 1989. He was the primary investigator for the King County Sheriff's Department in the Ted Bundy murder cases in the Pacific Northwest and was present for Bundy's final confessions before his Florida execution. He has personally investigated, reviewed, or consulted in more than 2000 murder cases. He has lectured extensively to police officers at national seminars on homicide investigation. He has testified in trial as an expert on the method of operation of serial killers, the "signature aspects" of murder investigations, and police investigations.

He is the author of several articles and books: *The Psychology of Serial Killer Investigations*, published in 2003 by Academic Press, *The Riverman: Ted Bundy and I Hunt the Green River Killer*, published in 1995 by Pocket Books; *Signature Killers*, published in 1997 by Pocket Books; *Murder: A Multidisciplinary Anthology of Readings*, published in 1999 by Harcourt Brace; and *Serial Murder: Future Implications for Police Investigations*, published in 2000 by Authorlink.com.

Dr. Keppel received his Ph.D. in Criminal Justice from the University of Washington in 1992. He graduated from Washington State University with a B.Sc. in Police Science and Administration in 1966 and an M.A. in Police Science and Administration in 1967. In addition, he received an M.E. degree from Seattle University in 1979.

William J. Birnes, J.D., Ph.D., *New York Times* bestselling author is chairman of the Board of Sunrise Community Mental Health Center in Los Angeles. He is an author in the fields of mental health, true crime, human behavior, law and journalism, and science and technology, as well as an editor and book publisher. His first true crime title, *Serial Killers*, is in its 19th printing at Random House. Birnes' book about the O.J. Simpson case in 1994 was made required reading for all first-year law students at Harvard Law School.

Birnes is the editorial director of his own literary imprint at Tor/Forge Books Macmillan Publishing in New York and is the president of the book production company, Shadow Lawn Press. He is also the publisher and president of Filament Books in New York and Los Angeles. A co-author of the *New York Times* bestseller, his *The Day After Roswell* in 1997 is a documentary on the History Channel (May, 2005). Birnes' previous cable feature "The Riverman" that was based on his book, The *Riverman*, which he co-authored with detective Dr. Robert Keppel about how serial killer Ted Bundy helped police track Green River Killer Gary Ridgway, was broadcast on A&E in September 2004.

Birnes is a frequent radio and television talk-show guest, having appeared on *Good Morning America, Dateline, Entertainment Tonight*, and *Coast to Coast AM*. He currently produces and hosts his own documentary series on *The History Channel*, appeared in the feature film *Occam's Razor* in 1999, and was featured in a Canadian Broadcasting Company documentary on the O.J. Simpson murder trial in 1995.

A National Endowment for the Humanities Fellow, grants judge for the National Endowment for the Arts, and law school graduate, William Birnes received his Ph.D. from New York University in 1974 while he was an Instructor of English at Trenton State College. He completed his post-doctoral work under a Lily Foundation Fellowship at the University of

Pennsylvania. Birnes has also worked as a member of a grants recipient team from the Bureau of Justice Administration and the United States Department of Justice. In 2007, Dr. Birnes was made the chairman of the board of directors of Sunrise Community Counseling Center in Los Angeles.

The Components of *Modus Operandi*, Ritual, and Signature

1

Introduction

Throughout history, police investigators, FBI agents, psychologists, and forensic psychiatrists have analyzed cases to determine the "profile" of an unknown offender. Since 1975, profiling has been referred to as applied criminology, psychological profiling, crime scene assessment, criminal personality profiling, crime scene profiling, offender profiling, and investigative psychology, among other labels. For the purposes of this book, the process will be called crime scene assessment. At least five outcomes are possible from crime scene assessment (Keppel & Walter, 1999):

1. Determining the physical, behavioral, and demographic characteristics of the unknown offender or offender profiling
2. Developing post-offense behavior of the offender and strategies for apprehension
3. Developing interviewing strategies once the offender is apprehended
4. Determining where evidence may be located
5. Determining the modus operandi (M.O.) and ritualistic behavior of the offender for the purposes of linking similar cases

For any of the preceding outcomes, the type of information used for analysis may differ. Typically, the information comes from the police investigative file: officers' reports, investigative follow-up reports, statements, evidence reports, evidence comparison requests, crime laboratory reports, crime scene diagrams, maps, photographs, videotapes of crime scenes, audio tapes of 911 calls, witness statements, and autopsy reports.

Linking of cases is served by two levels of analysis: the **communication and expert levels**. At the **communication level**, investigators link crimes to pursue the same suspect instead of operating without the knowledge that the cases are linked. This is where information systems, such as the Violent Criminal Apprehension Program (VICAP), the Homicide Investigation Tracking System (HITS), and the Violent Crime Linkage Analysis System (ViClass) have been most useful. Why should police detectives care if cases are linked? The reason is that suspect information in one case could be the answer to solving the linked case, and vice versa. At the **expert level**, district

attorneys and prosecutors link similar cases so a defendant can be tried on multiple charges in the same trial. Of course, it is the defendant's prerogative to request that each charge be heard separately by a different jury.

Historical Perspective

To understand how cases are linked to the same offender, one must be thoroughly familiar with the concept of M.O., which has been subjected to extensive analysis through the criminal appeals of serial offenders. Through this extensive scrutiny its definition has remained stable. Very simply, method of operation, or M.O., is used interchangeably to describe a certain criminal's way of operating (*State v. Pennell*, 1989; *State v. Prince*, 1992; *State v. Code*, 1994; *State v. Russell*, 1994).

One of the earliest records mentioning modus operandi was in 1654 in a piece called Zootomia: "Because their causes, or their modus operandi (which is but the Application of Cause and Effect) doth not fall under Demonstration." Modus operandi became popular in the 1800s, with citations in the *Edinburgh Review* in 1835, Mill's Logic III in 1843, and in Kenneth Grahame's short story "Justifiable Homicide" in the *Pagan Papers* in 1898 (Grahame, 1904; *Oxford English Dictionary*, 1933).

One of the earliest uses of M.O. in the United States was not associated with the operation of criminals or police investigations, but traced to civil matters and the law of patents dealing with inventions of machines (Robinson, 1890). In the case of *Whittenmore v. Cutter* (1813), the Massachusetts Circuit Court declared:

> By the principles of a machine (as these words are used in the statute) is not meant the original elementary principles of motion, which philosophy and science have discovered, but the Modus Operandi, the peculiar device or manner of producing any given effect. The expansive powers of steam, and the mechanical powers of wheels, have been understood for many ages; yet a machine may well employ either one or the other, and yet be so entirely new, in its mode of applying these elements, as to entitle the party to a patent for his whole combination.

The first police pioneer to use modus operandi was Major L. W. Atcherley, Chief Constable of the West Riding Yorkshire Constabulary in England (Fosdick, 1916). His efforts superseded the establishment of M.O. files in Scotland Yard in 1896 by 17 years. Major Atcherley devised workable clearinghouses for information on the methods of various criminals so they could be tracked from district to district. He constructed ten categories relating to an offender's M.O. They were:

1. **Classword**: Kind of property attacked (whether dwelling house, lodging house, hotel, etc.).
2. **Entry:** The actual point of entry (for example, the front window, back window).
3. **Means:** Whether with implements or tools (such as a ladder, jimmy, etc.).
4. **Object:** Kind of property taken.
5. **Time:** Not only the time of day or night, but whether church time, market day, during meal hours, etc.
6. **Style:** Whether the criminal in order describes himself as a mechanic, canvasser, agent, and so on, to obtain entrance.
7. **Tale:** Any disclosure as to his alleged business or errand that the criminal may make.
8. **Pals:** Whether the crime was committed with confederates.
9. **Transport:** Whether bicycle or other vehicle was used in connection with the crime.
10. **Trademark**: Whether the criminal committed any unusual act in connection with the crime (such as poisoning the dog, changing his clothes, leaving a note for the owner, etc.).

Major Atcherley recognized that special individual behaviors or unusual acts occurred at the scene of a crime. He called those the criminal's "trademark" (Fosdick, 1916). This recognition of a criminal's trademark was the precursor for what would become known as the offender's signature today.

By the late 1930s, M.O. identification techniques and procedures had become a standard part of criminal investigation literature (Soderman & O'Connell, 1936). Edwin Sutherland (1947) defined modus operandi as the "principle that a criminal is likely to use the same technique repeatedly, and that any analysis and record of the technique used in every serious crime will provide a means of identification in a particular crime."

The investigative use of M.O. began to change in the late 1980s. It became apparent that the M.O. of the same offender would change slightly from crime to crime. For example, a burglar who used a pipe wrench on the front door knob to gain entry changed his M.O. when he found the front door was unlocked. So the burglar entered through the unlocked front door without using the pipe wrench and changed his M.O. to fit the circumstances. In addition, it became apparent that a murderer or rapist would have to do the same thing from crime to crime (Douglas, Burgess, Burgess, & Ressler, 1992; Douglas & Munn, 1992; Geberth, 1996; Keppel, 1995; Keppel & Birnes, 1997; Keppel & Weis, 1999; Hazelwood & Michaud, 1999; & Keppel, 2000).

As with history, the discrete fact counts. Initially, all facts must be presumed to count equally; in time a pattern emerges by which one may place priorities of significance upon the facts as they relate to cause and effect. In

time one discovers the M.O. One cannot discover it in history, in detective fiction, or in life, by deliberately preselecting, skimming, or omitting as irrelevant an experience.

Methodology for M.O. and Signature Analysis

The methodology for determining the signature and M.O. of an offender is similar to that for "profiling" a case. The major differences lie in the type of information used and the results. To perform signature analysis and profiling, one must thoroughly examine the entire police case file.

This chapter, however, focuses on the methodology for determining an offender's method of operation and that same offender's ritualistic and non-ritualistic behaviors. To accomplish this, it is important to understand how the offender's rituals and non-rituals differ from the criminal's M.O. from case to case.

What really confirms that two or more crimes were linked to the same offender has not been through identifying M.O. characteristics of an offender per se, but through comparing the ritualistic behaviors observed at one crime scene with those at another. Finding similar ritualistic behaviors is one construct of an offender's signature. It is the purpose of this chapter to explain the differences among M.O., ritual, and non-ritual linking behaviors, and to demonstrate the uses of all in linking violent crimes to the same offender.

Using testimony about the offender's signature as evidence depends on various state statutes and appellate decisions. For example, the Supreme Court of Virginia held that:

> … evidence of other crimes, to qualify for admission as proof of modus operandi, need not bear such an exact resemblance to the crime on trial as to constitute a "signature," but it is sufficient if the other crimes bear a singular strong resemblance to the pattern of the offense charged and the incidents are "sufficiently idiosyncratic to permit an inference of pattern for purposes of proof," thus tending to establish the probability of a common perpetrator." (*Timothy Wilson Spencer v. Commonwealth of Virginia*, 1990)

Definition of Modus Operandi and the Characteristics of an Offender's Method of Operation

In modern-day usage, Hazelwood and Warren (2004) emphasized that "the term modus operandi is used to encapsulate all of the behaviors that are requisite to a particular offender successfully perpetrating a crime." It encompasses all behaviors initiated by the offender to procure a victim and complete the criminal acts without being identified or apprehended (see Table 1.1). In

Table 1.1 Common Crime Characteristics Associated with Modus Operandi

Victim's age, gender, and race
Offender's mode of travel
Transporting the victim's body for disposal purposes
Time of day of the offense
Type of building chosen for entry
Day of the week of the offense
Location of the offense
Weapon(s) used
Offender's multiple and varied approaches to victims
Factors facilitating the commission of the crime
Implements used to bind victims for functional purposes
Wearing a mask

their book *Practical Aspects of Rape Investigation*, Hazelwood and Burgess (2001) stated that M.O. has three primary purposes:

To protect identity
To ensure success
To facilitate escape

It has been those authors' experience that the M.O. of any one perpetrator is only valid for three to four months before it begins to change or evolve. This change results from the offender's experience gained through having committed a series of crimes, education obtained through incarceration, media coverage of similar crimes, publications or other public means of discussion, maturation of the offender, and his ability to adapt to a particular crime (Hazelwood & Burgess, 2001).

The explanation of the methods of operation of criminals was best stated by Warren and Hazelwood (2004). They emphasized that M.O. can be quite simple or very complex, with varying degrees of sophistication reflecting the experience, motivation, and intelligence of the offender. In serial sexual crimes, the M.O. evolves rapidly over time and can present significant changes in a period of only weeks or months. As an example, an 18-year-old rapist failed to use a condom. He ejaculated vaginally and was later convicted because his DNA evidence was recovered from the victim. He served 7 years and was released. Within a matter of months, he raped again, only this time he wore a condom. The same 18-year-old rapist stole two 4-ft speakers, a collection of CDs, and a CD player from his first victim. In the offenses after his release from prison, he stole only money and jewelry from his rape victims.

Another offender reported studying the professional literature on his crime of choice, as well as popular magazines that discuss in detail the crime scene behavior of infamous offenders. When he was later interviewed as a part of a federally funded research grant, he met the interviewer saying, ''I know who you are. When I was raping, I did a literature search on rape. And I've read everything you've ever written'' (Warren & Hazelwood, 2004).

Other factors outside the offender's control can also influence the manner in which a crime is implemented. The unavailability of a victim, the behavioral responses of the victim, and the interruption of an offense by another person all represent circumstances that can change aspects of an offender's M.O.

An FBI behavioral analyst was approached by a detective asking for guidance regarding a series of serial rapes. He indicated that the offender had raped sixteen women and had been labeled the ''First Floor Rapist.'' When the analyst asked about a seventeenth report that he found in the stack of documents, the detective asserted that the seventeenth offense must have been perpetrated by another offender because it occurred on the second floor of an apartment building. The detective's assessment did not capture the life contingencies that impact a criminal's behavior. The offender was unable to find a victim or to locate an unlocked window on the first floor. Therefore, he executed entry into a second-floor apartment to carry out his criminal intent (Hazelwood & Warren, 2004).

Hazelwood and Warren (2004) cautioned:

> However, not all features of the M.O. are subject to change. If a certain behavior has worked well for an offender and has not resulted in any unwanted outcomes, it is likely to be observed in future crimes of the same offender. As each behavior is executed over a number of situations, the criminal becomes more familiar with a particular series of behaviors and, therefore, more able to anticipate the outcomes of them. As with many other aspects of human behavior, this repetitive aspect of crime behavior affords the offender a sense of familiarity and control that allows him to focus more intently on the sexualized or aggressive motive for the crime.

In summary, testimony has occurred about certain crime scene characteristics that have proved to be significant in linking various crimes. Experts have noted changes and similarities in an offender's method of operation, modus operandi, or M.O. (Keppel, 1995). In particular, the way a crime is committed, for the most part, is influenced to some extent by the victim's response to the offender's actions. The M.O. of an offender includes those actions necessary to perpetrate the crime.

Ritualistic Behaviors in Crimes

The ritualistic aspects of a crime emanate from the internal psychology of a particular offender as opposed to the situational demands of committing a crime. They are derived from the motivation for the crime and the fantasies that express it (see Table 1.2). They are symbolic, as opposed to functional; as such, they are highly individualized and reflect the aspects of the crime scene that are unnecessary for the accomplishment of the crime but are pivotal in expressing the primary motivation or purpose of the criminal act itself (Hazelwood & Warren, 2004).

Vernon Geberth (2006) has linked fantasy-based elements of a sexual crime to the unique psychodynamics of the individual responsible for enacting these impulses through the criminal behavior. The ritualistic aspects can also express themselves differently over a series of offenses, either because of the refinement or evolution and more complete reflection of their underlying intent, fantasy substrate, or through the addition of unexpectedly arousing aspects of a prior offense. This is suspected in cases of serial rape. The rapist escalates in the degree of physical force, the increasingly intricate use of bindings, and the introduction of distinctive verbal exchanges over a series of assaults. Although earlier research suggests that 75% of serial rapists do not escalate in the degree of physical violence they inflict over time, 25% do escalate, apparently finding that more severe degrees of violence or dominance enhance their arousal (Warren, Reboussin, Hazelwood, Gibbs, Trumbetta, & Cummings, 1999).

Table 1.2 Common Crime Characteristics Associated with the Ritualistic Behaviors of Offenders

Posing
Leaving a victim in an open and displayed position
Leaving a victim in a sexually degrading position
Foreign object insertion
Having a prepared script for the victim
Intricate use of bindings or bondage factors that are sexually related
Cluster of stab wounds to a certain location of the body
Postmortem marking of the victim's body
Mutilation of body parts
Leaving victim's clothing neatly folded next to the body
Shaving the pubic region of the victim
Overkill—more death-producing blows or stabs than are necessary
Overkill—more than one death-producing weapon used
Postmortem sexual probing
Torture
Cutting of clothing

In other instances, bindings that begin as a way of restraining the victim for functional purposes of committing a crime can develop into a very intricate process, both in terms of the materials used and the manner in which the victim is restrained. For example, one serial rapist engaged in sexual bondage with all 55 of his victims in 12 states. In his first few rapes, he bound his victims using their clothing. Over time, he began using medical tape, precut lengths of rope that he brought to the crimes, and, eventually, handcuffs. In a different series involving sexual murders, statements demanded of the victims became an increasingly central and salient aspect of the crime, with specific and repetitive statements by the victim scripted by the offender (Hazelwood & Warren, 2004).

Observations Regarding M.O. and Ritual

In assessing the M.O. and ritualistic aspects of a crime, Hazelwood and Warren (2004) relate additional themes or observations from the application of this type of analysis:

1. It is not uncommon for a crime scene analyst to identify more elements of the M.O. than of the ritual. This is not unexpected, as the M.O. may include time, day, and location of the crime, the weapon used, sex and age of victim, the offender's mode of travel, and any number of other variables. The ritual, on the other hand, is much more narrowly focused, being composed of those acts specifically designed to complement the motivation for the crime and to meet the psychosexual needs of the offender.
2. All aspects of the ritual may not be present in every crime (Douglas & Munn, 1992). The time available, mood of the offender, and external circumstances, such as a roommate coming home, may all prevent the full repertoire of desired behavior from being enacted. Each of these factors can result in the ritualistic aspects of the crime being diluted, modified, or interrupted, depending on the internal state of the offender and the contingencies of a particular crime.
3. Some features of the crime may serve as part of the ritual and not be recognized as such by the analyst. For example, the manner used by an offender to approach his victim would most often be viewed as part of the M.O. However, one serial killer, who focused only on middle-class female victims for rape and murder, used guile to convince the women to accompany him. After his capture, he reported that he obtained an inordinate sense of power from his ability to convince middle-class and intelligent women to go with him, a total stranger, without having to resort to physical violence.

4. Some elements of the crime may function as both M.O. and ritual. In one particular series, a serial rapist captured numerous adult male and female couples at gunpoint in their homes and forced the wives to tie their husband's hands and feet with shoelaces. Such behavior would correctly be categorized as M.O., as it helped to ensure success by allowing the perpetrator to control both adults simultaneously and to use one to immobilize the other. However, having the wife neutralize the male "protector" also quite likely served as a ritualistic feature of the crime that sexually excited the perpetrator.
5. There may be instances in which one or more ritualistic aspects of the crime remain known only to the offender (Douglas & Munn, 1992). One serial killer recorded his daily fantasies about capturing a particular type of woman for sexual assault. He remained obsessively focused on victim demographics such as body style, color and length of hair, and breast size. Such features obviously played an important psychosexual role in the offender's crimes, but were only recognized as being part of his ritual after the discovery of his records.
6. When an "impulsive" sexual offender (Hazelwood & Warren, 2001) is involved, the crime may be devoid of ritualistic behaviors. Such criminals act out with little or no planning. Fantasy plays a very small role in their crimes, and the involvement of paraphilic or other ritualistic behavior is seldom observed with this type of offender. However, as with all human behavior, criminal or otherwise, there will be exceptions.

Non-Ritualistic Characteristics Used to Link Cases

Those offenders who engage in fantasy behaviors away from their crime scenes are different in nature, and, therefore, different in linking characteristics, from those who do not engage in fantasy behaviors. The impulsive sex offender, as described by Hazelwood and Burgess (2001), is one example and is least successful at evading identification and apprehension. At their crime scenes, the offenders exhibit power assertive or anger retaliatory behaviors (see Table 1.3). The sudden and "impulsive" punch to the face to sate one's power or anger needs is a common finding in the damage done to their victims (Keppel & Walter, 1999).

The power assertive rapist is sexually and verbally selfish in his attacks, a characteristic that is not the product of extensive fantasies. The rapist most often assaults victims of opportunity, uses the con approach, and changes demeanor only after the victim is relaxed and at ease. Frequently, he will rip or tear the victim's clothing, and the victim may be subjected to repeated sexual assaults. Therefore, the connective factors from one rape or rape murder

Table 1.3 Common Crime Characteristics Associated with Non-Ritualistic Behaviors of Offenders

Immediate punching in the face or similar pre-death injuries to intimidate or gain control
Tearing of victim's clothing
Using abusive and/or indecent language for intimidation purposes
Use of a weapon that has special importance to the offender, such as a favorite knife or firearm
Use of an opportunistic weapon to cause damage or death
Covering or turning the victim's eyes or face as the last act before leaving the scene

to the next will be associated with these types of behaviors that reflect the offender's power needs (Keppel & Walter, 1999; Hazelwood & Burgess, 2001).

The second type of rapist in the non-ritualistic category is the anger retaliatory. This rapist uses unnecessary force to sate his intense rage and anger needs. The main characteristic of this type of offender is the blitz approach. As with the power assertive offender, the anger retaliatory offender will rip or tear the victim's clothing. This offender uses weapons of opportunity, most often his fists. The connective characteristics are associated with the anger needs of the offender (Keppel & Walter, 1999; Hazelwood & Burgess, 2001).

Offender's Signature

Many serial offenders are not satisfied with just committing the violent crime but feel compelled to go further. Actions beyond those necessary to commit the violent crime demonstrate behavior unique to that particular killer. The offender's personal expression is called his signature, which is basically the linkage of ritualistic and non-ritualistic factors from one case to succeeding cases. Unlike M.O., the signature remains constant (Douglas & Munn, 1992; Keppel & Birnes, 1997; Geberth, 2006).

In his testimony in *State v. Steven Pennell*, John Douglas (1989) testified about the unusual characteristics or unusual offender input from one crime to the next one:

> When we are looking at crimes where there is a lot of unusual characteristics, a lot of unusual input on the part of the subject when he perpetrated that crime, there may be elements of that crime that are unique, that went far beyond just murdering the victim, just raping the victim …. A "signature crime:" what we attempt to do is look at a certain aspect of the crime that is unique, unique to that person who is responsible for that particular crime …. In rape cases, because you have a surviving victim, you know the verbal assault, the sexual assault, the physical assault.
>
> In homicide cases, when you start looking at cases, you look at it in such a way, you're asking yourself the question … why does he keep doing this certain

> element of the crime? He goes beyond modus operandi. Modus operandi is something that is used by the offender because it works. But modus operandi you have to look at is as something as being dynamic. It is ever changing. (Douglas, 1989)

Douglas and Munn (1992) described the signature as the "calling card" of an offender. In the current context, this term is used to describe a unique combination of behaviors that emerges across two or more offenses. It is a pattern that may include aspects of both the M.O. and the ritual. Recognition of a unique ritualistic or non-ritualistic aspect of a crime occurs when crime analysts or investigators are attempting to link two or more crimes that have occurred in either physical or temporal proximity or at times or locations that are highly divergent (see Table 1.4).

In examining the testimonies of persons linking cases in court, it is evident that developing behavioral characteristics in linkage analysis is visibly hierarchical: M.O. factors were initially located; those factors associated with rituals were next; M.O. as ritualistic behaviors were covered next, non-ritualistic behaviors were identified if discovered; and, finally, signature characteristics linking two or more crimes were identified. This order of coverage in testimony is not to be confused with their relative importance to linkage, as all of them are significant when considering whether one case is linked to the next. The hierarchical testimony is a reflection of careful calibration of factors important to linkage. It is not simply a question of the most important factor. The combination of all factors is what determines the signature linkage elements of the perpetrator.

Summary

A killer's method of operation contains those actions that are necessary to commit crimes. They may change from one crime to the next as the offender

Table 1.4 Common Crime Characteristics Associated with Linking Cases

Using the same ritualistic characteristics from one case to another
Increasing number of death-producing injuries from the first case to the last case
Decreasing number of defense wounds from the first case to the last case
Using similar scripted words from the first case to other cases
Consistent bondage techniques from one case to the next case
Similar types of necrophilic behaviors from the first case to other cases
Similar types of paraphilic behaviors used from one case to the next
Combination of certain number of characteristics which are statistically rare in occurrence

gains experience and derives more beneficial methods of operation from committing more crimes (Keppel, 1995). What the killer does beyond the crime—such as some forms of binding, arson, unnecessary stabbing, and arranging of bodies—should be the major focus of investigators in determining if crimes are committed by the same person. It is the signature that remains the same from the first offense through subsequent offenses. The ritual may evolve, but the theme persists (Douglas et al., 1992).

References

Douglas, J. E. (1989, October 5). Trial transcript of the testimony of John Douglas. New Castle County, DE: *State v. Steven Pennell.*

Douglas, J. E., Burgess, A. W., Burgess, A. G., & Ressler, R. K. (1992). *Crime Classification Manual.* New York: Lexington Books.

Douglas, J. E. and Munn, C. (1992). Violent crime scene analysis. *Homicide Investigators Journal.* Spring: 63–69.

Fosdick, R. B. (1916). *European Police Systems.* New York: The Century Co.

Geberth, V. J. (2006). *Practical Homicide Investigation: Tactics, Procedures, and Forensic Techniques.* Boca Raton, FL: CRC Press.

Grahame, K. (1904). *Pagan Papers.* New York: John Lame: The Bodley Head.

Hanfland, K. J., Keppel, R. D., & Weis, J. P. (1997, May). *Case Management for Missing Children Homicides.* Seattle: Washington State Attorney General's Office.

Hazelwood, R. R. & Burgess, A. W. (2001). *Practical Aspects of Rape Investigation.* Boca Raton, FL: CRC Press.

Hazelwood, R. & Michaud, S. G. (1999). *The Evil That Men Do.* New York: St. Martin's Press.

Hazelwood, R. R. & Warren, J. I. (2004). Linkage analysis: modus operandi, ritual, and signature in sexual serial crime. *Aggression and Violent Behavior*, 9, 307–318.

Keppel, R. D. (1995). Signature murders: a report of several related cases. *Journal of Forensic Sciences*, 40, 658–662.

Keppel, R. D. (2000). Investigation of the serial offender: linking cases through modus operandi and signature. In Schlesinger, L. B., Ed., *Serial Offenders: Current Thought, Recent Findings*, Boca Raton, FL: CRC Press.

Keppel, R. D. (2000, March). Signature murders: A report of the 1984 Cranbrook, British Columbia Cases. *Journal of Forensic Sciences.*

Keppel, R. D. & Birnes, W. J. (1995). *The Riverman: Ted Bundy and I Hunt the Green River Killer*. New York: Pocket Books.

Keppel, R. D. & Birnes, W. J. (1997). *Signature Killers.* New York: Pocket Books.

Keppel, R. D. & Walter, R. A. (1999). Profiling killers: A revised classification model for understanding sexual murder. *Journal of Offender Therapy and Comparative Criminology.* 43(4), 417–437.

Keppel, R. D. & Weis, J. P. (1993, April). HITS: Catching criminals in the Northwest. *Federal Bureau of Investigation Law Enforcement Bulletin*, 14–19.

Keppel, R. D. & Weis, J. P. (1999). *Murder: A Multidisciplinary Anthology of Readings*. Orlando: Harcourt Brace Custom Publishing.

Keppel, R. D. & Weis, J. P. (1994). Time and distance as solvability factors in murder cases. *Journal of Forensic Sciences*, 39(2), 386–401.

Murray, J. H. et al. (Eds.) (1933). *The Oxford English Dictionary*. Oxford: The Clarendon Press.

Robinson, W. C. (1890). *The Law of Patents for Useful Inventions*. Boston: Little, Brown, and Company.

Soderman, H. & O'Connell, J. (1936). *Modern Criminal Investigation*. New York: Funk and Wagnall's Company.

State of Louisiana v. Nathaniel Code (1994). 627 So.2d 1373.

State of Delaware v. Steven B. Pennell (1989). Del.Super., 584 A.2d 513.

State of California v. Cleophus Prince (1992). 9 CAL.App.4th 1176, 10 CAL.Rptr.2D 855.

State of Washington v. George W. Russell (1994). 125 Wash.2d 24, 882 P.2D 747.

Sutherland, E. H. (1947). *Principles of Criminology*. New York: J. B. Lippincott Company.

Timothy Wilson Spencer v. Commonwealth of Virginia (1990). 240 Va. 78, 393 S.E.2d.

Warren, J., Reboussin, R., Hazelwood, R., Gibbs, N. Trumbetta, S., & Cummings, A. (1999). Crime scene analysis and the escalation of violence in serial rape. *Forensic Science International*, 100, 37–56.

Whittenmore v. Cutter (1813). 29 F.Cas. 1123, No. 17, 601, 1 Gall. 478.

2

The Discovery of Signature

Harvey Glatman, the Lonely Hearts Killer, William Heirens—"Stop Me Before I Kill Again!"—and Morris Frampton

Introduction

Before there was the Violent Criminal Apprehension Program (VICAP) in the FBI's National Center for the Analysis of Violent Crime (NCAVC), and homicide investigative analysts who worked up cases of serial killers for local police, there was the celebrated Los Angeles Police Department (LAPD) homicide detective Pierce Brooks, a pioneer investigator in the field of signature killers and one of the first people to talk about catching repetitive killers by examining their behavior at crime scenes. In a most eloquent and brilliant speech on tracking violent serial criminals to the Second Annual International Conference of the Police Management Association in London, England (1985), Brooks explained to a gathering of police executives how serial killers kill and apply their modus operandi (M.O.) and ritualistic behaviors:

> Each psychopathic killer develops an M.O. that suits him best. M.O. may vary depending on the killer's experience and the circumstances and situation of the moment. But the killer's ritualistic symbolism, or "emotional motivation" to kill will change very little, if at all, during the time span he is physically capable of seeking out and destroying his victims. In other words, method of approach and body disposal might change over a period of time, but the murderer's "intrinsic personal touch" related to the victim and the victim's body will not.

Detective Brooks, veteran investigator in the "Onion Field" murder, developed techniques of investigation from understanding M.O. and ritualistic behaviors of killers that would lead to today's knowledge of how serial killers kill. In 1958 when most police investigators didn't even know what a

serial killer was, and, if they did, they wouldn't have necessarily known what to do about it, Pierce Brooks was applying his skills to gruesome homicide cases such as "the Lonely Hearts Murders," the crimes of Harvey Glatman, who challenged the investigative skills of police in southern California. It was through the understanding of M.O. and ritualistic behaviors that Pierce Brooks linked three separate murder cases.

"Lonely Hearts Killer" and the Murder of Shirley Bridgeford

Shirley Bridgeford had joined a "lonely hearts club" in Hollywood because she was looking for companionship, a not uncommon thing for single women during the 1950s in southern California. What she didn't know was that the intelligent Harvey Glatman, representing himself as a photographer for a lonely hearts magazine, enticing good-looking women to pose for him, was really a bondage-crazed sadist setting clever traps for his intended victims. With offers of money—what amounted to a modeling fee—to women flattered by the attention from a professional photographer, Glatman established both his ruse and method of operation, luring unwitting victims into allowing themselves to be handcuffed or bound. At that point, they were helpless, and Glatman was free to translate his sexually sadistic fantasies into homicides (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Glatman obtained Shirley Bridgeford's name when he contacted the lonely hearts club she had joined in 1958. Because that was the purpose of the club, a kind of a members-only singles bar, it was easy for Glatman to get anything he wanted. He didn't even have to show his driver's license to the young woman at the desk and used the alias George Williams of Pasadena. That became his new identity. Then, posing as the photographer and giving the false name—his M.O.—he phoned Bridgeford and made an appointment to meet her on the following Saturday night at her home in the San Fernando Valley. When Shirley Bridgeford came to the door, she saw a harmless-looking photographer who offered to take her for a drive in his car so they could get to know each other. Who had ever heard of a serial killer at a lonely hearts club? What had she to fear? (Keppel and Birnes, 1997)

The following information came in part from the transcripts of Glatman's interview with Los Angeles homicide detectives (Brooks, 1958; *People v. Glatman*, 1959). Glatman acted comfortably within his ruse, asking her what she wanted to do and then suggested that they just drive:

"Well, where do you want to go, just ride around?" he asked her. "Drive for a while, is that right?"

The couple drove for a couple of hours on the warm March night toward Oceanside until they parked off the highway in a secluded area. The conversation was innocuous, at first, and then, in Glatman's words, "we did some

necking." Glatman tried as hard as he could to push Shirley Bridgeford into having sex with him, but she began to push him away. So he took her for a bite to eat at a roadside restaurant when she said, "It's getting pretty late. We should be starting back."

But they didn't start back. Instead of driving back to Los Angeles up the coast highway, Glatman drove her east into the chaparral where he again pulled off the road.

"I wanted to see how far I could go with her and so we started necking again," he told police. "But I couldn't go as far as I wanted."

He tried to push by tentatively raising the subject of sex and then trying to persuade her to have intercourse. When Shirley refused and then pulled away from his advances, Glatman pulled a gun from his glove compartment and told her to shut up. As she sat there, looking at the gun and wondering what was going to happen next, Glatman promised her he wouldn't hurt her if she did what he said. Bridgeford agreed to do whatever Glatman wanted. So they got in the back seat and they had sex.

Now, with Shirley Bridgeford his silent victim and with the cover of darkness as his friend, Glatman drove southeast to a desert area in San Diego County, where he stopped and waited until the sun came up. Glatman had already decided to kill Shirley in the same way he had killed his previous victim, Judy Dull. By telling Judy that he wanted to shoot some pictures as illustrations for mystery stories in a magazine he was working for, he had persuaded her to pose as a victim with bound hands and feet (Isbell & Majors, 1958). When he had securely tied her up with his favorite ropes, and she was completely defenseless, he killed her (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

As in the Judy Dull murder, Glatman used the pretext of wanting to take bondage photos to tie up Shirley's hands and feet. He still had the gun, but he'd convinced her that if she only did what he told her, she wouldn't get hurt. So she acquiesced to his every demand. Once tied, Glatman posed his victim in the sand and then, after taking several pictures, he fastened a rope to the cord around Shirley's ankles, and pulled it tight so as to bend her knees up to her chin. He placed his knee into the small of her back, looped the rope twice around her neck and pulled as hard as he could for five to ten minutes until, struggling as hard as she could, she went into convulsions and then stopped breathing. Glatman took his rope, left his dead victim in the isolation of the desert, and drove back to Los Angeles as quickly as he could, stopping only along the way at various places to throw away Shirley's purse and its contents. This would become a common M.O. among repetitive killers such as Ted Bundy, who, 15 years later, would discard the belongings of his victims in similar fashion along the side of roadways. Glatman kept about 30 cents in coins from Shirley's purse (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Glatman said later that his only purpose in calling Shirley Bridgeford up for a date was to have sexual intercourse with her, either with her consent or

by force. Murder wasn't on his mind at first, he said, until he pulled his gun and knew he had committed a felony. But that was a lie, and the consent he said he sought was only self-serving rubbish. If he had to use force, he also admitted, he was prepared to kill her to avoid arrest (Brooks, 1958). But judging from his sexually deviant behavior in photographing women in undergarments while bound and gagged in various degrading and humiliating positions, his plan had to have been to kill them in the first place. It was clear, from what he did to women before he actually killed them, that in his mind his victims were already dead from the moment he picked them up. Glatman was almost completely impulsive and repeated a pattern of behavior as if it were a matter of habitual need. He even told homicide investigators that when he and Shirley first parked before he tried to seduce her, he had reached the conclusion that he would have to kill her for his own safety. Murder was on his mind from the very first moments (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Abduction and Murder of Ruth Mercado

In July 1958, Glatman changed his M.O. significantly in response to a changing situation when it seemed as though fate had simply thrown another victim his way. Glatman's approach to women, like that of the most cunning of long-term serial killers, had always been dynamic and completely flexible, depending on his access to and susceptibility of unwitting victims. He played to his victims' needs and fantasies to lure them into a trap. Until he met victim number 3, Ruth Mercado, most of the women he spoke to were only looking for companionship. But Mercado was different; she was looking for employment in the very career Glatman was offering. Glatman came across her name in a classified ad that Ruth Mercado had placed in a local paper seeking work as a model. When Glatman read it, he immediately modified his M.O. and contacted her directly through the number in the ad. This time, instead of using the lonely hearts club as a cover, he had an even better cover to preserve his anonymity. Serial killers are opportunists, and Glatman seized upon the chance to contact a potential victim who was already looking for a photographer. Her defenses would be completely down (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Glatman called the number in the ad and made a date with Ruth to visit her at her apartment in the evening and interview her for the assignment. To Ruth nothing seemed out of the ordinary. When he showed up at her door, looking not the least bit threatening, the unsuspecting Mercado invited him right in. But just as soon as the door closed behind him, Glatman pulled a gun from his pocket, told her to keep quiet and do exactly as he said, and ordered her to the master bedroom. He had gained control over her just as he had with Bridgeford and Dull, using a cover story to get them alone where he could spring his trap. Now he took even greater control, control that aroused him sexually. He bound her hands and feet and gagged her to keep her silent.

Then he warned her, gesturing with his gun, that if she struggled or made any noise, it would be the end of her. She got the message and stayed put while Glatman checked out the apartment like a nervous cat burglar. Because Glatman had never taken anyone from a building before, he had to plan as he went along, changing his M.O. in each and every minute detail from the script he had used with Dull and Bridgeford. This was all new to him, and he made sure his victim's apartment had a back door just in case he had to get out of there fast.

He came back to the bedroom where Mercado was waiting, tied up, and shaking in terror (Keppel & Birnes, 19997).

From Glatman's statement (Brooks, 1958), he ordered, "Don't do anything foolish. I'm going to untie you." Then he told her they were going to have sex right then and there, but she'd be all right if she didn't give him any trouble. "Now where's your money?" he demanded.

She pointed him to her dresser, where there was $20 or $25 in bills that he stuffed into his pocket. Then he untied her and forced her to have sex with him again and again until she fell asleep. Then he waited in the darkness, listening to her heavy breathing, until just after midnight, when he tied her hands behind her back, put a coat over her shoulders to hide her hands and arms, guided her to his car, where he pushed her down into the seat, and drove her southeast from Los Angeles toward the desert in San Diego County.

When they arrived at the isolated location he had chosen, he pulled her out of the car and arranged her, just as he had with Shirley Bridgeford. Acting out his sexual compulsion to memorialize the control he exercised over his victims, Glatman took five or six pictures of Mercado with her hands and feet tied and in poses similar to those in the Shirley Bridgeford pictures. Not only was he satisfying himself sexually through the photography, he was creating a totem that would help him to relive the excitement.

After spending most of the day in the desert with Ruth Mercado, he told her it was too risky to take her back to Los Angeles. He was going to have to kill her, he said, but first he wanted to take more pictures. He told her he was going to take some "flashlight pictures," but it was only a ruse. He forced her to pose again with her hands and feet tied, but he quickly looped a piece of rope from her ankles to bend her legs back, put his knee in the small of her back, and wound the rope twice around her neck. Like a cowboy securing his calf at a rodeo, he pulled it as tight as he could for about 5 minutes while she twitched and gasped for air. He waited until her heaves subsided and her breathing stopped. Then he left her in the desert, where her body would eventually decompose to skeletal remains. As he drove back to Los Angeles after the murder, he tossed most of Ruth's belongings out of the car along the highway. He kept about $10 that was in her purse, a wristwatch, and a few personal items such as a wallet with identification papers and some articles of clothing (Brooks, 1958).

Arrest of Harvey Glatman

The beginning of the end for Harvey Glatman took place on the evening of October 27, 1958, when a motorcycle cop discovered him struggling with a frightened Lorraine Vigil as he attempted to keep a gun on her and tie her up while they were parked on a side road in Orange County. The officer quickly intervened and realized that Glatman had used the gun in an unsuccessful rape attempt. He arrested the sullen Glatman, who was stopped at the high point of gaining control over another victim and who made no statements to the police (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Initially, Glatman agreed to take a lie detector test during which he denied any involvement in the murders of Dull, Bridgeford, and Mercado. But the polygraph readings indicated he was lying, so it was up to the detectives to find a way to get him to confess. In the cat-and-mouse interrogation that followed, Glatman said about the polygraph test, "I just wanted to see how it worked. I know you found those pictures in my apartment," revealing to Pierce Brooks and the two other detectives that there was incriminating evidence—the photographs he took of his victims—in a locked toolbox in his apartment. He revealed this information because he believed the police had already found them. Actually, the police were unable to open the toolbox without a search warrant, but they had to fake their knowledge of these photos to get Glatman to talk about them so they could use his response as the probable cause to get the search warrant to get into the toolbox (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Pierce Brooks said that he and the other two police had to "fake" knowing about the photographs during the hours of interrogation as Glatman lapsed into his confession because they needed him to talk about the crimes. He had already admitted to the murders. Now it was a matter of getting the physical evidence against him—the bodies of the three victims. Glatman became convinced that because the police already had the incriminating photos of the murders of his victims in their possession, things would go harder for him if he didn't tell them all they wanted to know. Accordingly, he confessed to everything (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Glatman directed detective Pierce Brooks and the other homicide investigators to the locations in San Diego County where he had killed Bridgeford and Mercado. The officers found the remains of the two victims where he said they were, but, because the hot desert sun had completely dried their bones and obliterated Glatman's signature of bondage, the prosecution never raised the accusation of signature murder against him at trial, even though the descriptions of his murders were examples of a true signature. In their search of Glatman's apartment, police found a metal toolbox that contained Ruth Mercado's billfold, some of her clothing, and the chilling photographs that he took of Shirley Bridgeford and Ruth Mercado when he posed them in the

desert. In true signature killer fashion, these items had reignited Glatman's sexual thrills between the murders (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

The photographs were an essential part of Glatman's personal signature of murder and that was why their existence had taken on a life of their own during the interrogation and had actually forced Glatman into a confession. They were even more than souvenirs, because in Glatman's mind they actually carried the power of his need for bondage and control. They showed the women in various poses: sitting up or lying down, hands always bound behind their backs, innocent looks on their faces, but with eyes wide with terror because they had guessed what was to come. Their after-death photos were even more horrifying to police because they revealed Glatman's true nature. They showed the ways the killer had positioned his victims, and the depravity they evidenced was revolting. That a human being could so reveal the depths his own weakness and feelings of insignificance through photographs was something investigators had not seen before. What were they dealing with here? Was Glatman something less than human? LAPD homicide detective Pierce Brooks had to find the answer (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

First of all, Brooks believed that Glatman's confession that he had decided at certain points to strangle each woman for fear of being caught was nothing more than an attempt to conceal his real psychological need for killing. His signature photos depicted a far different story. They were images of Glatman's detailed methodology of murder, which showed a sequence of terror by recreating the entire psychological arc of the crime. He first photographed each victim with a look of innocence on her face as if she were truly enjoying a modeling session. The next series represented a sadist's eye view of a sexually terrorized victim with the impending horror of a slow and painful death etched across her face. The final frame depicted the victim's position that Glatman himself had arranged after he strangled her. Innocence, the horror at her realization of being trapped, and her complete acquiescence in death—these are the central phases of Glatman's signature of serial murder. The photos showed that Glatman killed the three women not to cover up the abductions and rape, but to obtain the photos that were the essential part of his underlying behavior. Glatman had to experience his euphoria of violence with all three poses for each victim. His story that he just picked up each victim with the idea of engaging in consensual intercourse was a complete lie. His only motive from the outset was to torture and murder, to bring each woman to a secluded place where he could exercise total and absolute control, to engage in sexually sadistic ridicule, and to punish them before and after death (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

The nature of Glatman's signature crimes was uncovered by Pierce Brooks who, in so doing, became the first law enforcement officer to recognize the importance of determining the killer's calling card to link similar murders. His early investigation of Glatman was the forerunner of VICAP, the FBI's

serial murder tracking program, which Pierce first conceived of as a way to organize the vast amount of disparate evidence in signature murder cases that often confounded the police.

The Glatman murders were similar in their psychological elements to murders that had taken place in Chicago 6 years earlier. Those were the infamous crimes of another reputed genius, triple murderer William Heirens.

Lipstick Murderer

"For heaven's sake, catch me before I kill more; I cannot control myself," was scrawled in bright lipstick on a mirror by William Heirens at the bizarre scene of a killing in 1945. What sort of message was that, investigators wondered. Was the unknown killer on a mission of self-preservation, wanting someone to catch him? Did some playful news reporter pen the words, as some had believed? Was the killer exhibiting some perverted, personal expression of control over his helpless victim and the police? Perhaps the writing was the power of a ritualism, something that he just had to do, no matter what. Or was it a Sherlock Holmes-type clue leading directly to the identity of a demented killer?

Heirens, a 17-year-old university student with an IQ of 110, terrorized Chicago for 2 years. He viciously murdered two adult women and a 6-year-old girl, and committed 26 additional crimes that included burglaries, robberies, and assaults. His career began with simple break-ins, but he gave off indicators of his pathology when he stole women's undergarments and urinated and defecated in the homes he'd entered. Eventually, his fantasies of violent sexual crime escalated to murder. He killed two women who, he falsely confessed to police, had interrupted his masturbation.

On January 7, 1946, Heirens' M.O. changed dramatically when he moved from murdering adult females to kidnapping a 6-year-old child, Suzanne Degnan, from her home on the south side of Chicago. He broke into the child's room and subdued Suzanne in her bed. Hearing strange noises, the child's mother called out to see if she was all right, almost discovering the crime in progress. Heirens forced the frightened Suzanne to say that she was okay, and then waited in the darkness until he heard the mother walk away, probably believing her daughter had gone back to sleep. Heirens immediately killed the little girl in her own bed, rolled her up in a blanket, and carried her to a basement where he had sex with her and mutilated her. Suzanne's dismembered body was later discovered in a sewer catchbasin. A ransom note, which was found by the child's father, was the only trace left by her abductor, a sign of control over the circumstances that the killer felt he needed to exert. Afterward, Heirens nonchalantly returned to his dormitory room (Kennedy, Hoffman, & Haines, 1947 to 1948).

Although the elements of Hereins' signature murders were obvious, you can't blame the police for not recognizing them, because the knowledge of signature killing wasn't even the language of law enforcement in the 1940s, especially in Chicago. First, for Chicago cops in a city with a history of traditional gangland hits or murder-for-hire contracts, Hereins' three murders were atypical. The characteristics of those cases did not match any others during that era. Second, despite Hereins' changing method of operation—from attacking adult females to a young child—his signature remained constant. At the core of Hereins' signature was his obsession with defecation and urination, which were the vivid illustrations of his overwhelming compulsion to demonstrate the helplessness of his victims and control over police officers pursuing him. In other words, his domination reflected an attitude of "I shit on everybody." And finally, the messages he scrawled were the visual representations of his attempt to manipulate others, even though the wording was different in each note. It was not the actual wording of the notes or the writing medium, but his compulsion to leave notes that was the signature (Kennedy, Hoffman, & Haines, 1947–1948).

Like many other serial killers, Heirens' crime spree was brought up short when he was accidentally apprehended for a crime not directly connected to murder. On June 26, 1946, he was stopped in the act of burglarizing a building by an off-duty police officer. Heirens tried to shoot his way out, but his pistol jammed and he was bludgeoned into submission with three flower pots by a rookie police officer returning from a nearby bathing beach. After he was in custody, another policeman noticed that Heirens signed his name with a conspicuous curve flourish, which was the same handwriting seen on a ransom note and a message written in lipstick. According to latent-fingerprint experts, his fingerprints matched latent prints found on the Suzanne Degnan ransom note. Also, his prints matched a bloody latent print found on the doorjamb where Frances Brown had been killed (Keppel & Birnes, 1997; Marshall & Drizin, 2002). Heirens pled guilty to three murder indictments and twenty-six additional indictments charging burglaries, robberies, and assaults (*William Heirens v. Prisoner Review Board*, 1987).

Sir Arthur Conan Doyle

With a thorough and detailed analysis of each scene, the individual characteristics of Hereins' and Glatman's ritualistic behaviors could have been useful in connecting their murders according to what we know today. The examination of each crime scene must exhibit the cautious and meticulous search for physical evidence and psychological clues left by the killer that Sherlock Holmes so diligently searched for at the fictional crime scenes reported in the writings of Sir Arthur Conan Doyle (1881).

The search for signature evidence reflects the words of Sherlock Holmes (Doyle, 1881). A favorite literary piece of his was *The Book of Life*, a magazine that attempted to show how much an observant man might learn by an accurate and systematic examination of all that came his way. It struck Holmes' partner, Watson, as a remarkable mixture of shrewdness and absurdity. Its reasoning was close and intense, but the deductions appeared to be farfetched and exaggerated, much like some detectives of modern times who, until they become experienced at recognizing the sometimes subtle differences a killer portrays from one murder to the next are, at first, skeptical of linking cases that differ in M.O. As it was with Sherlock Holmes, so it is with the results of M.O. and ritualistic behavioral analyses of today that are both so startling that they mystify the uninitiated, until the processes by which they were arrived at are understood.

Sherlock Holmes (Doyle, 1881) once said:

> A logician could infer the possibility of an Atlantic or a Niagara without having seen or heard of one or the other. So all life is a great chain, the nature of which is known whenever we are shown a single link of it. Like all other arts, the Science of Deduction and Analysis is one which can only be acquired by long and patient study, nor is life long enough to allow any mortal to attain the highest possible perfection in it. Before turning to these moral and mental aspects of the matter which present the greater difficulties, let the inquirer begin by mastering more elementary problems. Let him on meeting a fellow-mortal learn at a glance to distinguish the history of man, and the trade or profession to which he belongs. Puerile as such an exercise may seem, it sharpens the faculties of observation, and teaches one where to look and what to look for. By a man's fingernails, by his coat-sleeve, by his boot, by his trouser knees, by the callosities of his forefinger and thumb, by his expression, by his shirt-cuffs—by each of these things a man's calling is plainly revealed. That all united should fail to enlighten the competent inquirer in any is almost inconceivable.

With that statement, Doyle captured the essence of M.O. and ritualistic behavioral analysis at homicide scenes.

Communication between Investigators: Morris Frampton Murders

To find the core of a killer's signature, an investigator must be educated and alert to the changes in a killer's M.O. and ever-cognizant of those features of a killer's calling card that never change. Although an informed signature analysis did not specifically link the cases at trial, the gut feelings of Seattle detectives linked them to murders committed by Morris Frampton in the mid-70s. Communication between Seattle Police Detectives and King County Sheriff's

Detectives not only linked two murder cases, but that linkage was responsible for detectives working together to apprehend the same killer for both murders.

Murder of Rosemary Stuart at the South Park Marina

The following information was excerpted from the King County Sheriff's Homicide Case File (Keppel, 1977): The morning of August 9, 1977, started out at 61 degrees on the way to such a bright, sunny day in Seattle that everyone in the Major Crimes Unit of the King County Police was wishing they were any place but inside the courthouse. Investigators received a call from the communications center at about 7:45 A.M. that there had been a homicide of a female at the South Park Marina.

The discovery of Rosemary Stuart at the South Park Marina would be the first occasion that detectives in the Seattle region linked murder cases, the importance of which could not be underrated because it was the first introductory lesson to the paradigm of the signature killer, a phenomenon relatively unknown at that time.

The marina was located at 16th Avenue South and South Dallas Street, just one block outside the city limits of Seattle. Nestled among industrial buildings, the marina served boat owners who moor their small craft on the Duwamish River. Through an 8-foot-high cyclone fence investigators saw the desecrated remains of what looked to have once been a beautiful woman. Her face was still etched with the pain and injuries from what was surely a horrendous beating, later attested to by autopsy report that listed 81 injuries to the exterior of her body.

Maybe the killer thought that he had gotten clean away with a murder, but the police had a witness. Within 50 feet of the entrance to and inside the gate of the South Park Marina, Sharon Adams had been asleep alone in the trailer she shared with her husband, who worked the late shift at Boeing. At 3:05 A.M., startled out of sleep by the throbbing of an idling engine, she grabbed her electric clock to read the time. The engine idled for about another minute; then it was shut off. Sharon heard crashing noises and the sound of metal being kicked. At first, she thought she heard a child, but then decided it was the voice of a woman moaning and whimpering. She heard the sound of skin-on-skin, which she described as the slapping sound of sexual intercourse, rhythmic, repetitive. Frightened, she dressed just in case she needed to get away from whoever it was. Then, she heard the woman's voice again, this time pleading, "Don't, I'm already dead." Things outside were quiet for a minute, then she heard the sound of two doors slamming and an engine turning over. With the noise of tires spinning in gravel, the killer's car left the scene. Adams stayed put, locked inside the trailer with no telephone. Only when officers arrived, after the manager had called them upon seeing a dead body, did she come out to tell her story.

Figure 2.1 Murder weapon left at the scene by the offender. (Photograph courtesy of King County Police, Seattle, Washington.)

The unidentified dead female was laid out in the supine position and located about 30 feet southeast of the gate on top of a small sand pile. She was nude, strangled with a black piece of elastic wound tightly wound around her neck (see Figure 2.1). Most injuries had been inflicted before death, signifying that she was tortured by the constant banging on her body. With her legs spread, it was as though the killer had wanted her to be fully exposed to all who saw her body. Was there some message in the positioning of her body? The inner portions of her thighs were bruised by the blunt instrument (as was proven later by the Medical Examiner to be the weapon used to rape her). Her left arm was obviously broken, since it was bent into the shape of an S. The back of her head was savagely beaten in, and one mark was indelibly etched across her back. That mark showed linear indentations that corresponded exactly to the corrugations in a piece of rebar found within 15 feet of the body.

Physical evidence was abundant at the crime scene. According to Locard's Exchange Principle of Countertransference, the killer would have taken blood and hair from the victim and sand from the pile with him. He left his weapon, a 5/8-inch-wide piece of pipe about 2 feet long with a piece of rebar bent so it was wedged or stuck inside the pipe (see Figure 2.1). The entire weapon was about 4 feet long. The killer's vehicle left tire impressions. A yellow spongy material was strewn all over the scene and was spread to a location that was determined to be in line with the suspect vehicle's trunk. At some point, the killer's car struck the gatepost upon entering the marina. There were two types of paint transfer, green paint transferred to the post

Figure 2.2 The victim's body at the South Park Marina. (Photograph courtesy of King County Police, Seattle, Washington.)

from the suspect's vehicle and gray and blue chipped from the post and transferred back onto the killer's car. Surely with all that evidence the police could connect the killer, but he had to be found fast before he cleaned up his vehicle.

The detectives at the scene had never seen such a brutal murder. This type of sexually related killing was extremely rare. In the history of murder in Seattle, there had been only one other committed 2 weeks before the discovery at the South Park Marina; therefore, police suspected the murders were committed by the same killer.

The murder case at the South Park Marina was not only a who-done-it but a who-is-it, the worst of all possible combinations for homicide investigators.

But within minutes of clearing the scene, detectives received crucial information that led to the identity of the victim because news of the murder had spread quickly to Seattle detectives. In checking police reports from the previous shift, Seattle police came up with a "Found Property" report that detailed the discovery of a purse in the International District, where prostitutes were known to operate. An anonymous caller frantically reported that he had seen a female beaten by a large man with bushy hair and glasses, who tore off her clothes and stuffed her into the trunk of a dark-colored car. By the time—just before 3:00 A.M.—police arrived the car was gone. All they found was a purse belonging to Rosemary Stuart, also known as Rosemary Park, a slender white female, 5 feet 4 inches tall and 104 pounds, who used two dates of birth, December 17, 1950 or 1951 and had a rap sheet listing multiple arrests for prostitution. Her fingerprints, taken when she was booked, matched those taken at autopsy from the body at the South Park Marina.

Murder of Iantha Buchanan

The following information was excerpted from the Seattle Police Homicide Case File of Iantha Buchanan (Baughman & Holman, 1977). When a detective called to thank the Seattle detectives for the Rosemary Stuart information, another fatal attack on a prostitute was revealed. The Seattle Police were investigating the murder of Iantha Buchanan, a black female prostitute. In this serial murder investigation, the killer was racially indiscriminate in his choice of victims. As the reader will soon discover, this became increasingly common in prostitute murder cases—especially serial murders—where the issue is not the race of the victim or the race of the killer but the vulnerability of prostitutes, who are already working outside the law, seek to attract potential customers, and place themselves under the predator's control as a process of conducting business (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

King County Medical Examiner Dr. Donald Reay estimated that Buchanan's murder took place July 30, 1977, sometime between 2:00 A.M. and 4:00 A.M., exactly 9 days before the murder of Rosemary Stuart. Her body was discovered lying on top of the cement foundation of a building construction site about 5 miles from the South Park Marina (see Figure 2.3). From a cursory review of the case and the crime scene photographs, with the exception of the location and the victim's race, the same psychopathological aspects in the killer's character were present in the Buchanan case as in Rosemary Stuart's murder.

Like Rosemary Stuart, Iantha Buchanan had suffered a terrible beating, with multiple blows so devastating it was clear that the killer was not only been out to kill her, but to destroy her (Keppel & Birnes, 1997). She died from multiple blunt impact injuries to the head, with fractures of the vault and base of the skull, extensive cerebral cortical contusions, and extensive

Figure 2.3 The first victim in the Frampton series, found at a construction site. (Photograph courtesy of King County Police, Seattle, Washington.)

fractures of the facial bones. She also received blunt-impact injuries to the neck and trunk and sustained a fracture to her right clavicle. Marks in blood on the newly dried concrete surface showed that the killer had dragged the victim from the front of the building to the back. She was graphically posed in the corner of the building, lying on her back with her pubic region fully and deliberately exposed. One leg was propped up against the rear wall and the other propped up against the side or intersecting wall. Her feet were 23 inches from the floor, a position that seemed to indicate that the killer was degrading the very essence of her womanhood (Keppel & Birnes, 1997). She was partially nude with her panty hose on her left leg and removed from the right leg. Intertwined in the nylons was her underwear. Her red skirt was pulled up and covered her face. She was wearing a black blouse, but it had been ripped open to expose her chest. At the scene, but several feet away from the body, detectives found the victim's bra.

The sight of a bludgeoned victim lying fully exposed at the crime scene so shocked even the most seasoned Seattle homicide detectives, they were horrified at the killer's expression of pure evil. It seemed almost as if the killer, in his own mind, of course, was performing a ritual act of violent retribution on women to the point where the identity of the victim seemed far

less important than the fact that she was a woman. The Buchanan and Stuart murders went far beyond pure and simple homicides into a realm investigators call "overkill," the repeated infliction of injuries so intense that murder was incidental to the injuries, which were themselves the be-all and end-all of the crime. Cops have seen overkill before, but Buchanan's and Stuart's deaths added new meaning to the term (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Seattle police quickly identified Iantha Buchanan from the identification cards in the black purse they found at the scene. She was 27 years old, 5 feet 7 inches tall and a slight 127 pounds, physically very easily controllable for a large man. Detectives quickly determined that Marcus Jackson, her live-in boyfriend, was the last person to have seen her alive at about 9:45 P.M. At that time, they left their apartment on to work the streets in downtown Seattle and Jackson lost sight of her as she walked away. Typically, she would make contact with a trick, agree on a price, and then direct him to the Moore Hotel, where the couple maintained two "trick" rooms. She would walk ahead of the trick, meet him by the elevator, and then take him to one of the rooms. Jackson claimed that Buchanan would not turn tricks inside a vehicle. But something happened that night to change her usual methods.

Signature Analysis in the Buchanan and Stuart Cases

Although the details of signature analysis, as currently used as testimony in murder trials, had not appeared anywhere until the later 1980s, both the Stuart and Buchanan cases display the classical signs of ritualistic behaviors of the sexually sadistic serial killer. Initially, the detectives had linked the two murders only by their gut instincts based on what they observed, not on any observable combination of events that directly related the two cases. Without calling it a signature case, the obviousness of the overkill in both murders led detectives to suspect that the killer was the same person, even though, for the purposes of M.O. and signature analysis, one must examine the Buchanan case first and discover the subtle changes in M.O. from that case to the Stuart case.

If one takes the individual M.O. factors in both cases separately, no matter which case occurred first, and totally neglected the evolving signature of the killer, a false theory that these victims were killed by different people would develop. But, to understand those two murders, it would be necessary to first examine the characteristics of murders throughout the previous 10 years in the Pacific Northwest. Analysis would demonstrate that no other homicide cases resembled in nature the unique ritualistic characteristics of Stuart and Buchanan. Those two murders, committed within 9 days and 5 miles of each other, within the same jurisdiction and exhibiting the same degree of violence inflicted upon the body, were truly rare in occurrence.

Therefore, analysts of homicide cases recommend an examination of the frequency of similar cases throughout history for any particular region.

Stepping away from the multitude of details at each scene by examining 2-dimensional photographs and the 3-dimensional descriptions of external evidence of injuries from the autopsy reports, one gets more than a glimpse of the core of the killer's signature. The overpowering sight of bodies lying in ritualistic-type positions—legs splayed grotesquely, exposing the pubic area of each woman as if mocking her sexuality—the massively fractured skulls, which sustained multiple fatal trauma wounds, and the fact that the victims' bodies were intentionally—almost ritualistically—displayed in areas where the killer knew each victim would obviously be found, represents the repetitive core of this killer's signature (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

As the noted California psychiatrist, Dr. Park E. Dietz, and others (1996) once said in describing the sexually related murder, sexual sadists who commit these crimes do so to "fulfill their sexual desires." Even if such a killer commits other crimes such as robbery, felony murder, or drug trafficking, it is only the sexual murder that objectifies his basic sadistic pathology. One could add that you can see the difference in the intent of the crimes from the nature of the killer's signature that he always displays at the crime scenes, although aspects of the operation of the crime or the killer's method may change from crime scene to crime scene.

In the Frampton case, the abduction of a black woman, Iantha Buchanan, and then a white woman, Rosemary Stuart, shows a change in the killer's M.O. Police usually link victims to a same-race killer because traditional sexual violence theories teach that, statistically, blacks kill blacks and whites kill whites. But to a serial prostitute killer, streetwalkers and those whom he perceives as prostitute types are his victims and fair game no matter what their race. The serial attacks upon prostitutes actively hooking on street corners is the basic calling card signature of a killer who knows exactly how such women can be picked up and, ultimately, controlled. Their very vulnerability and willingness to get picked up is the profile that attracts the killer and drives him into a sexual frenzy (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

The killer in the Buchanan and Stuart cases used the very intimate method of choice for many sexually sadistic killers: extreme bludgeoning. In this signature, the hammering away at the victim, strike after strike, actually increases the sexual fury throughout the crime, the killer becoming more intense and whipping himself deeper into a violent trance-like state with each blow until the fury is expended. The blows themselves and the stripping away of the victim's humanity with each massive bone-smashing wound only incite the killer to greater violence. What's even more telling is that the killer escalates the overkill from victim to victim, resulting in a greater number of potentially fatal injuries as the killer extends his series. For example, the number of intimate injuries increased from the Buchanan murder to the

Stuart murder, which should indicated to signature analysts that the escalation itself of overkill injuries was the killer's true gratification, not just the inflicting of injuries upon any specific victim. The feeling of additional thumping of fatal injuries and torture satisfied his lust for the crescendo of violence, total mastery over the victim, and the sexual satisfaction aroused by intense fury. The victim herself was almost meaningless in the killer's mind, only an asset of opportunity. The overkill sexual murderer is usually incapable of any sexual orgasm without performing violent acts and probably only reaches a climax, if he ever reaches climax at all, when the victim is dead and displayed (Liebert, 1985). It is just as likely that the overkill signature killer is hardwired so perversely in the neural circuitry of his primal brain that sex becomes violence and violence becomes sex in such a way that the killer never reaches climax at all. The fury expended in the carrying out of violence is the only physical or psychological release the killer experiences.

The last aspect of the Buchanan/Stuart killer's signature was his insertions of foreign objects into the victim's sexual orifice. He experimented with this, and it looked as though he was evolving a methodology of how he would defile his victims. Step one, in the Buchanan case, was to pose her in plain view. This was a core element of his signature that he repeated in the Stuart murder and would have repeated with subsequent victims, had he not been apprehended. The next stage in this evolution, once the victim has been posed with her legs spread, is to insert a foreign object into the victim's vagina. This stage is considered a sexual perversion that evolves over time from one murder to the next in cases where the killer is posing his victims. There was no evidence of sexual insertion of a foreign object in the Buchanan case, but there was such evidence in the Stuart case. The killer's sexual experimentation in the Buchanan case was to pose her in a bizarre state of undress after ripping her clothing off. The killer ripped the clothes off Stuart, too, but had evolved his method into a more violent act of defilement by inserting the rebar into her vagina. These sexual acts of violent disrobing, ripping of clothing, and foreign object insertion were derived from the killer's need to cause pain and terror and to humiliate each victim by leaving her in a state of utter defilement. This is how investigators knew the same killer had committed both crimes even though Stuart's murder was more violent than Buchanan's. The killer was simply getting more frantic and was experimenting with his own bizarre sexual fantasies.

Catching the Killer

The following information was taken from the King County Sheriff's (Keppel, 1977) and Seattle Police Department's (Baughman & Holman, 1977) Homicide Case Files. By now, leads in the Buchanan/Stuart murders were coming into the investigation fast and furious. A service station attendant

Figure 2.4 A bloody print from the victim's finger was found in the suspect's trunk. (Photograph courtesy of King County Police, Seattle, Washington.)

reported that he saw a white male with blood all over him. The white male had no visible signs of injuries and drove his green 1969 Dodge Charger into the service station. The man was 6 feet 3 inches tall and dripping blood from his face, hands, and clothing. The service station attendant fixed the car's tail lights while the man washed up in the restroom. The attendant discovered that three tail light bulbs were broken out from the inside of the trunk. Had Rosemary Stuart tried in vain to attract police attention to the car by breaking out the lights as she was being transported in the trunk of the car? The attendant described the car in detail: a two-door with a bench front seat instead of bucket seats, automatic transmission, black upholstery, two small yellow wires that were hooked together hanging from under the dash on the passenger side. There were beer bottles on the back floor boards and two beer bottles on the passenger side of the front. The car was very dirty with a labored idle, as if it were in need of a tuneup (see Figure 2.4).

In the trunk, the attendant noticed a pillow containing yellow foam stuffing. The man claimed to have been worked over and rolled for his money. This had to be the wanted man—tall, with bushy hair, glasses, and driving a green car. Responding officers searched the restroom and recovered blood stains, foam rubber, and hair samples. This evidence would eventually be compared with evidence found at the scene, when it was found to match the victim's hair and blood and the foam rubber particles located at the scene.

Detectives next searched the victim's house in north Seattle. Here they found her car registration—she probably drove a white Chevrolet, a fact confirmed by her landlord, who also said she had a small child. But where were the car and her child? Detectives found out that Rosemary Stuart's child had

been turned into Child Protective Services because the mother had never returned to pick up the child from the babysitter. Next, knowing that Stuart liked to hang out in the International District, those areas were searched. Detectives drove up to the Yesler Terrace Apartments and found the white Chevrolet. Inside the car, detectives found a section of the *Seattle Times* newspaper. Several days later, detectives would find a matching section to that same newspaper in the green Dodge Charger belonging to the killer.

For the next several days, in response to an all-points bulletin, police officers throughout King County and Seattle had been stopping vehicles and identifying the drivers of 1969 green Dodge Chargers and beat-up reddish-colored pick-up trucks. At about 3:50 P.M. on August 14, 1977, Seattle police plainclothes officers Robert Avery and Jules Werner, working 2 William 96 in West Seattle, observed a 1969 black-over-green Dodge Charger heading westbound on Admiral Way. They followed the vehicle for about two blocks, when the driver made a left-hand turn without signaling and failed to yield the right of way to an oncoming vehicle that had to brake and swerve wide to avoid an accident. Now, having a traffic violation they could use to pull the suspect vehicle over and identify the driver from what they knew from the homicide bulletins, they stopped the car in the 3200 block of 59th Avenue Southwest, just as it pulled in behind a rust-colored pick-up truck. Driver Morris Frampton explained to the officers that the truck had a flat tire, and that they were going to fix it and tow the truck home. Both Avery and Werner knew that a beat-up reddish-colored pickup truck was a suspect vehicle in the Buchanan homicide and an assault on another prostitute. What a coincidence. The car they were looking for just happened to pull in behind another homicide-suspect vehicle they were also looking for.

Werner checked the bulletins and recognized that the driver, Morris Frampton, fit the composite drawing. The officers had also learned from that the suspect Charger had a yellow wire dangling down under the dashboard on the passenger side. It was in plain view on the car they had just stopped. They also were also looking for fresh damage on the car that the Charger might have received from striking the gatepost at the South Park Marina. It was there on the right front fender, and Officer Werner also saw what appeared to be dried blood on the car's passenger seat. As he passed the pickup, Werner noticed several pieces of rebar in plain view in the bed of the truck and also knew that rebar was listed as a weapon in the county homicide case. With all this information, the officers placed Morris Frampton under arrest and turned him over to homicide detectives. Ultimately, this arrest would clear up two murders and three vicious assaults.

At the Seattle Police impound building, the processing of both vehicles for trace evidence was undertaken by members of the Washington State Patrol Crime Laboratory. They meticulously retrieved one piece of physical

evidence after another that placed Rosemary Stuart in the Charger's trunk and that car at the South Park Marina.

The most telling evidence discovered on the outside of the car was the paint transfers on the left front fender. Vertically, the scratches on that fender were at the same height as the scratches on the gatepost. The contact with the post caused dark green paint from the highest portion of the damage to be transferred from the car. A lower scratch on the fender received the telltale gray and blue paint from the gatepost. The mathematical possibilities were so far-reaching that this evidence was regarded almost with the significance of a fingerprint. A curious combination of evidence was found on the top and near the headlight of the right front fender. Wedged in previous damage were small pieces of sand caked with the victim's hair and blood, that were traced back to the sand pile. Crime scene specialists surmised that when Frampton ran back to his car in a hurry to escape, he braced his hand on the fender as he ran around the front end of the car. That effort to support his weight transferred to the fender multiple traces of evidence that had accumulated on his left hand.

On reaching the undercarriage of the car, evidence technicians found bloodstains that were eventually compared to and matched Stuart's blood type. On the lowest chrome sideguard on the car, a large swipe-type stain was found. It was clear, as reconstructed from the sequence of events leading to the

Figure 2.5 Small pieces of foam rubber inside the suspect vehicle's trunk. (Photograph courtesy of King County Police, Seattle, Washington.)

murder, that at some point during the assault Stuart tried to crawl under the man's car in a futile attempt to protect herself.

Lying on the rear seat of Frampton's Charger was the classified section of the *Seattle Times* newspaper of August 9, 1977. That was the exact section missing from the newspaper found in Stuart's Chevy. It was as though Stuart had kept it with her because it had the telephone number of the babysitter she left her child with that night.

The most valuable evidence came from the Charger's trunk, a cornucopia of incriminating evidence against Frampton. At first glance, small tiny particles of yellowish foam rubber littered the inside (see Figure 2.5). One would have thought that Frampton would have cleaned it out by now to throw off all evidence of suspicion, but such wasn't the case. Each of those pieces matched in type, color, and consistency with the particles retrieved at Stuart's death scene. Mixed in with the spongy material was hair that was eventually found to be microscopically indistinguishable from the head hair of Rosemary Stuart. Blood stains left by swiping motions covered the inner surface of the trunk lid. And then, incredibly, the victim's fingerprint was found etched in one of the bloodstains (see Figure 2.4).

Detectives learned from the Frampton case that signature overkillers, in the act of smashing and splattering their victims, can be so taken over by the act of violence that they sometimes give up control and can never retrieve the evidence they leave. This is the aspect of overkill that is so important—in the act of violence, they surrender control. In surrendering control, they give up the aspect of invisibility that makes serial killers so difficult to catch. Detectives learned, therefore, that when a signature killer is consumed by his signature, he gives up control and the evidence will be there to catch him.

References

Baughman, W. & Holman, D. (1977, July 30). Homicide Investigative Case File of Iantha Buchanan, Seattle, WA: Seattle Police Department.

Brooks, P. R. (1958, October 30). Transcripts of the interview of Harvey Glatman, Los Angeles, CA: Los Angeles Police Department.

Brooks, P. R. (1985, October 28). Tracking violent serial criminals. Speech presented before the Second Annual International Conference of the Police Management Association, London, England.

Brooks, P. R. (1987, September 17). Serial murder: The killer, case recognition, investigation, and management. Speech presented at the Regional Organized Crime Information Center Conference on Serial Murders, Nashville, TN.

Dietz, P. E., Hazelwood, R. R., & Warren, J. L. (1996). The sexually sadistic serial killer, *Journal of Forensic Sciences*. 41(6).

Doyle, A. C. (1881). A study in scarlet, in *The Annotated Sherlock Holmes*. New York: Winged Books (1992).

Isbell, T. P. & Majors, R. B. (1958, November 5). Transcripts of the interview of Harvey Glatman, San Diego, CA: San Diego County Sheriff's Department.

Keppel, R. D. (1977, August 9). Homicide Investigative Case File of Rosemary Stuart, Seattle, WA: King County Sheriff's Department.

Keppel, R. D. & Birnes, W. J. (1997). *Signature Killers*. New York: Pocket Books.

Kennedy, F., Hoffman, H., & Haines, W. (1947–1948) Psychiatric study of William Heirens, *Journal of Criminal Law & Criminology*. 38, 311–341.

Liebert, J. (1985). Contributions of psychiatric consultation in the investigation of serial murder. *International Journal of Offender Therapy and Comparative Criminology*. 43(4).

Marshall, L. C. & Drizen, S. A. (2002). Amended Petition for Executive Clemency to George H. Ryan, Governor of the State of Illinois.

People v. Harvey Murray Glatman (1959). 52 Cal. 2d 283, 340 P.2d 8.

William Heirens, Petitioner-Appellant v. Prisoner Review Board, et al., Respondents–Appellees, 162 Ill. App. 3d 762; 516 N.E.2d 613; 1987 Ill. App. LEXIS 3438; 114 Ill. Dec. 458.

3

The Jack the Ripper Murders
A Modus Operandi and Signature Analyses of the 1888–1891 Whitechapel Murders*

ROBERT D. KEPPEL, JOSEPH G. WEIS, KATHERINE M. BROWN, AND KRISTEN WELCH

Introduction

Between 1888 and 1891, eleven female victims were murdered in the Whitechapel area of London. At the time it was not known which of the crimes had been committed by the same killer. To date, there is still wide debate about which victims can be attributed to the same murderer. Following the surmise of some investigators at that time (Evans & Skinner, 2000, p. 585), it has been frequently cited that the same assailant committed five of the known Whitechapel murders (Abrahamsen, 1992; Begg, Fido, & Skinner, 1996; Canter, 2003; Evans & Gainey, 1998; Fido, 1993; Gordon, 2001; Smithkey, 1998; Sugden, 2002).

The purpose of this chapter is to link the murders committed in the series by the unknown murderer, popularly called *Jack the Ripper*. Modern crime scene assessment procedures, including signature analysis, were conducted on the eleven murders to determine which cases may be linked by crime scene characteristics and to establish the signature of the killer. The crime scene assessment and signature analysis were based on recently released Scotland Yard case files, inquest reports, police records, crime scene photographs, and sketches contained in the sources cited in this chapter. References to newspaper articles contained in the sources were avoided due to lack of substantiation. The authors recognize that these sources are incomplete by today's standards, making the application of modern crime scene assessment procedures more difficult. However, the authors will not engage in specula-

* Reprinted from Keppel, R. D., Weis, J. G., Brown, K. M., & Welch, K., *Journal of Investigative Psychology and Offender Profiling*, 2(1), 1–21, 2005. Copyright © 2005 John Wiley & Sons, Ltd. With permission.

tion based on absent information, but will rely on the existing crime scene information.

In addition, the relative rarity of signature characteristics displayed in the Whitechapel murders was assessed based on an analysis of a modern database of all murders in Washington State between 1981 and 1995 (n = 3359). The objective was to determine which Whitechapel murders, sharing a set of distinct characteristics, were likely to be connected to one another and committed by the same killer. The details and evidence described will show that a serial killer murdered *six* of the women among the eleven Whitechapel murder victims.

Background

Despite the apparent rampant crime in the area, there is some confusion about the prevalence of murder. The Annual Report of the Sanitary Conditions of Whitechapel listed no murders in the Whitechapel area in the years 1886 and 1887. The report listed only seventy-one cases of violent death in the Whitechapel area in 1887; sixty-nine of those deaths were attributed to accidents and the remaining two were suicides. Only one murder was recorded for the entire Whitechapel area in 1889 and again in 1890 (Paley, 1996). This suggests that although the Whitechapel area was crime laden, the occurrence of murder was rare.

However, other analysts (Emmerichs, 2001) have shown that murders in Whitechapel were likely more common and typical of other high crime rate areas in London. There are a number of reasons for this. Recordkeeping was not systematic; the classification of cause of death was rudimentary, haphazard, and often inaccurate; the official residence of the victim had to be in Whitechapel to be counted; and the poverty of the residents and victims (referred to at the time as members of the "dangerous classes") militated against any official legal action. Analyses of nineteenth century London coroners' records indicate that it was unusual for a coroner to classify suspicious homicides as murders. Coroners were paid by a Justice of the Peace for their investigations, which were typically not requested because they were considered unnecessary. Coroners were not required to have a medical background until 1926, so they were often involved in occupations other than medicine. Emmerich's (2001) examination of hundreds of inquests performed in the nineteenth century in London indicates that the criminal homicide rate was much higher than reported in the sparse and unreliable documents of the time.

The eleven Whitechapel murders examined in this chapter occurred over a 10-month time span (Table 3.1). The primary questions are: Were the eleven murders the work of the individual referred to as *Jack the Ripper*? Or, was it some subset of the total number of possible Ripper victims? If so, how many?

Table 3.1 Timeline of Whitechapel Murders

Date	Victim	Location
Tuesday 3 April 1888	Smith	Assaulted and robbed, Osborne Street, Whitechapel
Tuesday 7 August 1888	Tabram	George Yard Buildings, Whitechapel
Friday 31 August 1888	Nichols	Yard crossing on Bucks Row, Whitechapel
Saturday 8 September 1888	Chapman	Back yard of No. 29 Hanbury Street, Spitalfields
Sunday 30 September 1888	Stride	Inside gates of Duffield's Yard in Berner Street, St. Georges-in-the-East
Sunday 30 September 1888	Eddowes	Mitre Square, Aldgate, City of London
Friday 9 November 1888	Kelly	Apartment at No. 26 Dorset Street, Spitalfields
Thursday 20 December 1888	Mylett	Clarkes Yard, High Street, Poplar
Wednesday 17 July 1889	McKenzie	Castle Alley, Whitechapel
Tuesday 10 September 1889	Unknown	Under railway arch, Pinchin Street, St. Georges-in-the-East
Friday 13 February 1891	Coles	Roadway in Swallow Gardens, Royal Mint Street, Whitechapel

Which ones? How are they linked? Before those questions are answered, each of the cases will be described briefly.

Details of the Emma Elizabeth Smith Case

On 3 April 1888, between 4:00 and 5:00 A.M., Emma Elizabeth Smith returned to her common lodging house at No. 18 George Street, Spitalfields. She had been assaulted and robbed at approximately 1:30 A.M. on 3 April while passing Whitechapel Church. With the help of two neighbors, Smith walked to the London Hospital where she died at 9:00 A.M. on 4 April from injuries sustained in the attack (Gordon, 2001; Evans & Skinner, 2001). Smith, a white female, was 45 years old and five feet two inches tall with a fair complexion and light brown hair (Evans & Skinner, 2000).

The offense was committed on the pathway opposite No. 10 Brick Lane, located 300 yards from the victim's residence and half a mile from the

London Hospital. Statements made by Smith before her death indicated that the motive for the attack was robbery by three attackers (Evans & Skinner, 2000; 2001).

The coroner determined that her head had been bruised and her right ear torn. Her abdomen was injured and her peritoneum was penetrated by a blunt instrument thrust up her "woman's passage." Other internal organs were ruptured, and great force had apparently been used to cause the injuries. Her death was attributed to peritonitis, caused by the rupture of the peritoneum (Evans & Skinner, 2000).

Details of the Martha Tabram Case

About four months after the murder of Emma Elizabeth Smith, the body of a fully clothed woman was found lying on its back with the clothes disarranged at approximately 4:45 to 4:50 A.M. on a first floor landing at the George-yard-buildings, Working Lads' Institute, Whitechapel. The victim, a white female, was identified as Martha Tabram, sometimes known as Martha Turner, who resided at No. 19 George Street, a common lodging house, under the name of Emma, and was known to be a prostitute and heavy drinker. Martha Tabram was approximately 36 years old, well nourished, five feet three inches tall, with dark hair and a dark complexion. She was wearing a dress, green skirt, brown petticoat, long black jacket, brown stockings, side-spring boots, and a black bonnet (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Gordon, 2001; Sugden, 2002; Begg, 2003).

Martha Tabram's body was found face-up in a pool of blood. Her clothing was arranged to leave the lower part of her body exposed, and her legs were lying open. There were no footprints, weapons, or blood on any of the stairs leading to the landing. Blood evidence was consistent with an inspector's determination that she had been murdered in the exact spot she was found. There was a concentration of blood at the site where the body was found and no visible drag marks or evidence that the body had been moved (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000).

A resident left the George-yard-buildings at approximately 4:45 to 4:50 A.M. for work. When he reached the first floor landing he found Martha Tabram lying on her back in a pool of blood. He called for the police. He didn't see any blood, footprints, or weapons on the staircase, but he noticed that the victim's hands were clenched and that her clothing was disheveled (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Sugden, 2002; Begg, 2003).

The coroner was called to the scene of the murder and found that Tabram had approximately thirty-nine stab wounds, many of which were concentrated on the left side of her body. Nine were in her throat and seventeen in her breast, and the others were in the lower parts of her body. She had been deceased for about three hours at that time, placing the time of death

sometime between 2:00 and 4:50 A.M. The left lung had been penetrated in five places and the right lung had been penetrated in two places. The heart was penetrated once, which was sufficient to cause death. The liver was penetrated in five places, the spleen in two places, and the stomach in six places. The doctor also identified wounds to the neck, the genitals, and a wound that penetrated the chest bone. The wounds did not appear to be from the same instrument. The wounds were consistent with penetration by a knife or dagger. All of the wounds were inflicted before death (Gordon, 2001; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Sugden, 2002).

Details of the Mary Ann Nichols Case

The murder of Mary Ann Nichols occurred on Friday, August 31, 1888. Her body was found between 3:40 and 3:45 A.M. on a secluded yard crossing/footway at Bucks Row, Whitechapel by two car-men. The victim was dressed and lying on her back with her clothes pushed up almost to her stomach, which one of the witnesses pulled back down to her knees (Evans & Skinner, 2000, p. 42). Her throat had been slashed from ear to ear (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2001; Sugden, 2002; Begg, 2003).

Believing the victim to be alive, the car-men notified a constable. While they were in the process of notifying the constable, another constable found Nichols, at approximately 3:45 A.M. as he was walking down the right side of Buck's Row toward Brady Street. The constable found the victim lying in the street, outside a gateway with her head toward the east. The gateway (which led to some stables and was nine to ten feet in high) was closed. Houses ran eastward from the gateway, with a boarding school west of the location (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Begg, 2003).

Mary Ann Nichols, a known prostitute, was about 43 years old. She was about five feet two inches tall, with brown or gray eyes, a dark complexion, and dark brown, graying hair. She had been a workhouse inmate, chargeable to the Parish of Lambeth after 1882 (Evans & Skinner, 2000, pp. 24,29). Her face was bruised and discolored, and she was known to drink fairly heavily. She had been separated from her husband for nine years (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Smithkey, 1998; Gordon, 2001; Sugden, 2002; Begg, 2003).

The body was lying lengthways with the left hand touching the gate. The body was warm, and blood was oozing from a wound in her throat. Nichols's bonnet was lying to the right side of her body, close to her left hand, and her clothing was disarranged. The back of her coat was drenched in blood. The killer had left her body open and exposed to be quickly discovered (Evans & Skinner, 2000).

At the time of her death, Nichols was wearing a brown dress, a brown linsey frock with a gray woollen petticoat, white chest flannel, brown stays, white chemise, black ribbed woollen stockings, a man's S.S. boots with a cut

on the uppers and tips on the heels, and a black straw bonnet trimmed with black velvet. The victim also had in her possession a looking glass, comb, and a white handkerchief (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Sugden, 2002).

The postmortem examination left no doubt that the murder was committed where the body was found. No signs of struggle or drag marks were found. A search of the area was conducted, but no murder weapon or markings on the road made by wheels were found (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Begg, 2003).

Nichols was last seen, in a state of drunkenness, on August 31 at 2:30 A.M. at the common-lodging, No. 18 Thrawl St, at the corner of Osborne St and Whitechapel Road. The witness indicated that the victim did not have any money and was going out in an attempt to make the money needed for lodging for the night. The victim was seen alone. No witness accounted for her presence after 2:30 A.M., until her body was found at 3:45 A.M. Witnesses did not hear any screams or noise (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Begg, 2003).

The coroner determined that Nichols's throat was cut from left to right. Two distinct cuts were on the left side of the throat. The windpipe gullet and spinal cord were cut through. The throat was cut so deeply, it nearly severed the head from the body. The incision was about 8 inches in length and appeared to have been caused by a long-bladed, sharp knife. A bruise was located on her lower right jaw. Another bruise was located on her left cheek. Both bruises were consistent with being caused by a fist, thumb, or fingers. The tongue was slightly lacerated. Five teeth were missing. There were no bruises found on the victim's arms to indicate a struggle had taken place (Evans & Skinner, 2000; Gordon, 2001; Begg, 2003).

There was no blood found on the breast, body, or clothing. The abdomen had been jaggedly cut open from the center of the bottom of the ribs along the right side, under her pelvis to the left of her stomach. The coating of the stomach was cut in several places. No viscera were missing. There were two stab wounds on her "private parts." There was some question as to whether the perpetrator was left-handed, as reported in the first police report. The coroner believed the abdominal injuries were inflicted first and caused instantaneous death. The time of death was estimated at between 3:15 and 3:45 A.M. on August 31, 1888. The physical evidence supported the finding that she had been murdered in the exact spot where she was found. The blood evidence suggested that the wound to the neck occurred before the injuries to the abdomen, and that many of her injuries were sustained while she was on the ground (Evans & Skinner, 2000; Gordon, 2001; Sugden, 2002; Begg, 2003).

Details of the Annie Chapman Case

The murder of Annie Chapman occurred in the early morning hours of Saturday September 8, 1888. The time of death is not clear, because of conflicting accounts given by witnesses. In one of the police inspector's reports, it is stated that a man was passing through Bucks Row on his way to work at about 3:40 A.M. on September 8, when he saw a woman lying on her back in the walkway leading to the stable yard. He called out to a passerby, both of whom went to find a constable. When the constable arrived at the scene, another one had already discovered the body. The first constable sent for Dr Llewellyn, who pronounced the woman dead and called for the removal of the body to the mortuary (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Sugden, 2002). Unfortunately, this account does not indicate the times the constables arrived on the scene, or the time the body was removed.

This account is different from the one contained in the inquest documents, which suggests that the victim may still have been alive after 3:40 A.M. A local resident went out on the back porch of No. 29 Hanbury Street at 4:45 A.M. and did not notice a body, whereas another reported that he heard noises at 5:25 A.M. over the fence in the yard. At 5:30 A.M. a woman stated that she saw a man and woman talking near No. 29 Hanbury Street. She later identified that woman as the deceased (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Gordon, 2001; Begg, 2003). However, a body was not discovered until 5:45 A.M., by another resident of No. 29 Hanbury Street, when he went down the steps into the yard. He found the body of a dead woman lying on her back. A different police inspector was notified at 6:10 A.M. that a woman's body had been found. This inspector called for another doctor, Dr Phillips the division surgeon, who arrived at the scene at 6:30 A.M. He opined that the woman had been dead for at least two or three hours, which would place the time of death between 3:30 and 4:30 A.M. (Evans & Skinner, 2000; Sugden, 2002). Of course, this calls into question the accuracy of the accounts of those witnesses identified in the inquest reports, and lends some credence to the competing description of events. Neither one is compelling. Suffice to say, Annie Chapman was killed in the darkness of morning.

She was a widow between the ages of 45 and 47 years old, five feet tall, with a fair complexion and wavy dark brown hair and blue eyes. She was missing two teeth in her lower jaw and had a large thick nose. She was apparently malnourished, had tuberculosis, and possibly syphilis. She was dressed in a black figured jacket with a brown bodice, black shirt, striped petticoat, lace boots, and a crepe bonnet. Her clothing was old, dirty, and bore the mark of Lambeth Workhouse. A bloody handkerchief found around her neck was later identified as her own. Two brass rings that the deceased commonly wore were missing. She was known to work as a prostitute and had lodged at the Crossinghams Lodging house at No. 35 Dorset Street, Spitalfields.

The victim was discovered lying on her back, two feet from the back wall of the house. Her head was facing toward the wall. The body was approximately six to nine inches from the steps. There were six patches of blood varying in size from a sixpenny piece to a point. Head patches and smears of blood appeared about fourteen to eighteen inches above the ground on the wooden palling to the left of her body. There was blood on the inside of the neck of her jacket and drops of blood on her left sleeve, consistent with the injury to her neck. In addition, there were a few droplets of blood spattered on her stockings, likely from the wounds inflicted to her abdomen after she was on the ground. There was no evidence of a struggle in the yard. No weapons were recovered at the scene of the murder. A wet leather apron was lying in the yard about two feet from the water tap (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Gordon, 2001; Sugden, 2002).

At approximately 1:40 A.M., Chapman had been seen in the kitchen at No. 18 Thrawl Street, when she informed the deputy that she had no money to pay for her lodgings and requested that the bed be kept for her. She was drunk at the time. A fellow lodger last saw Chapman at the corner of Osborne Street and Whitechapel Road. The church clock had chimed 2:30 A.M., so there was no confusion about the time. It is important to note that the distance from Osborne Street to Bucks Row was approximately half a mile (Gordon, 2001; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Begg, 2003).

The victim's swollen face was turned to the right side with her tongue protruding beyond her teeth, but not out of her mouth. There was a bruise over her right temple and a bruise on the upper eyelid. There were two distinct bruises on the forepart of her chest; each was the size of a man's thumb. Her left arm was resting on her left breast and her legs were drawn up. Her hands were raised and bent with the palms toward her upper body as though she had reached for her throat. There was a bruise on the middle of her right hand (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Sugden, 2002; Begg, 2003).

Her small intestines were abducted, and the flap of the abdomen was lying above the right shoulder attached by a cord, with the rest of the intestines inside the body. Two flaps of skin from the lower part of the abdomen were lying in a large quantity of blood above the left shoulder. Her throat was cut deeply from the left and back in a jagged manner right around the throat. The markings were consistent with the deceased being seized by the throat while the cuts were made. Her fingers bore marks of abrasion on the first phalanx of the ring finger with distinct markings of rings being visible on the proximal phalanx of the same finger. This suggested evidence of having rings removed from the fingers by force (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Gordon, 2001; Sugden, 2002; Begg, 2003).

The following body parts were missing: part of the belly wall including the navel, the womb, the upper part of the vagina, and a greater part of the bladder. The manner of removal of viscera suggested to the coroner that the

murderer had anatomic knowledge. The knife used was not an ordinary knife, but an amputating knife or a well-ground slaughter man's knife. The knife was narrow and thin with a sharp blade, approximately six to eight inches in length (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; 2001; Gordon, 2001; Sugden, 2002).

The physical evidence suggested that the perpetrator seized the victim from behind by the chin and pressed her throat. This would have produced unconsciousness and suffocation. There was no evidence of a struggle or sexual assault. Then the victim was lowered to the ground and laid on her back. Her throat was then cut from left to right in two places, injuries were sustained to the abdomen, and her uterus was taken from the womb (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Sugden, 2002).

The contents of her pockets were emptied and arranged in order at her feet. The little care taken with the ring removal suggested that the perpetrator was interrupted. The injuries to the viscera were not necessary, since the loss of blood at the neck resulted in death (Evans & Skinner, 2000).

Details of the Elizabeth Gustafsdotter Stride Case

The body of a woman was found inside the gates of Dutfield's Yard at No. 40 Berner Street, commonly referred to as the Berner Street Club, at the corner of Commercial Road East in St Georges-in-the East, at approximately 1:00 A.M. on Sunday, September 30, 1888, by a club steward. The body was lying in a pool of blood near the open gateway on the left side. The feet of the victim were about six or seven feet from the gate. The head was facing towards the club wall (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Smithkey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Gordon, 2001; Sugden, 2002).

The left arm of the victim was extended from the elbow, cachous lying in hand. The right arm was over the stomach. The back of her hand and inner surface of her wrist were dotted with blood. Her legs were drawn up with her knees fixed so her feet were close to the wall. The body was still warm. There was a silk handkerchief around her throat, which was slightly torn, corresponding to the angle of her right jaw. Her throat was deeply gashed, and there was an abrasion on the skin about an inch and one-fourth below the right brow. Her clothing appeared undisturbed. There was no sign of struggle. No murder weapon was found at the scene. No footprints or blood marks on the wall were found at the scene. There was a piece of paper doubled up in the victim's right hand. The victim was carrying a small piece of lead pencil, a key, a thimble, two pocket handkerchiefs, a pocket comb, a piece of wool on a card, a broken piece of comb, a metal spoon, some buttons, and a hook (Evans & Skinner, 2000; Sugden, 2002).

The victim was identified as Elizabeth Gustafsdotter Stride, alias "Long Liz," a known prostitute. She was Swedish, about 45-years-old, with a pale

complexion, light gray eyes, dark, curly hair, and approximately five feet three inches tall. She was wearing an old, long, black jacket trimmed with fur with a red and white flower pinned to it, two light serge petticoats, white stockings, white chemise with insertion in front, side spring boots, and a black crepe bonnet. She also had a colored silk handkerchief around her neck. The victim was missing her upper teeth at the front. She had a black mark from an old adder bite on her leg and a hollow on the bottom of her foot as a result of an accident (Evans & Skinner, 2000; Gordon, 2001; Sugden, 2002; Begg, 2003).

The victim was found lying on her left side with her head resting in the line of the carriage way. Her legs were drawn up and her feet were against the wall of the right side of the passage. Her neck, chest, legs, and face were slightly warm, but her hands were cold. The right hand was open, lying on her chest, and was smeared inside and out with blood. The left hand was partially closed, lying on the ground, and contained a small packet of sweets wrapped in tissue paper. There were no rings or marks on any of the fingers. The face was placid with the mouth slightly open. A silk scarf was around the neck, with the bow on the left side pulled tightly. There was a long incision in the neck corresponding with the lower border of the scarf. The lower edge of the scarf was frayed as if by a sharp knife. The incision at the neck commenced on the left side about two and one-half inches from the jaw line. It severed the vessels on the left side about one and one-half inch below the jaw line (Evans & Skinner, 2000; Gordon, 2001; Sugden, 2002; Begg, 2003).

No blood was found on any of the clothing. The victim's bonnet was lying on the ground a few inches from her head, and the dress was undone at the top. The victim bled out slowly and could not have called out for help after the windpipe was severed. The murderer may have taken hold of the back of the scarf and pulled the victim backward, but it was impossible to determine if the victim was standing when her throat was cut (Evans & Skinner, 2000; Begg, 2003).

Details of the Catherine Eddowes Case

The body of a woman was found by a police constable at Mitre Square, Aldgate, City of London, at approximately 1:45 A.M. on Sunday, September 30, 1888. The victim was lying on her back in a pool of blood. Her feet were facing the square, and her clothing was pulled above her waist (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Smithkey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; 2001; Begg, 2003).

Three small, black, metal buttons (a type used for women's boots) were found on the left side of the victim. A common metal thimble and a small mustard tin containing two pawn tickets were also found at the scene. The victim had no money on her. A portion of the apron she was wearing had been cut through and was found inside her dress. Her head, neck, and shoulders were lying in a pool of uncongealed blood. No footsteps were present

and no evidence of a struggle was found at the scene. Another part of the victim's apron was found at 2:20 A.M. on Gouldstone Street. At the spot where the apron was found, the words 'The Juwes are the men That Will not be Blamed for nothing' were written in chalk on the wall (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Smithkey, 1998; Gordon, 2001; Evans & Skinner, 2000; 2001; Sugden, 2002; Begg, 2003).

The victim was identified as Catherine Eddowes, alias Conway. Her age was estimated at between 43 and 46 years. She was not a prostitute at the time, but was given to drinking. She earned a living by cleaning and hawking on the streets. She was five feet tall and had auburn hair and hazel eyes and the letters TC tattooed in blue ink on her left forearm. She was wearing a black straw bonnet, black cloth jacket, chintz skirt, brown linsey dress bodice, gray stuff petticoat, green alpaca skirt, ragged blue skirt with red flounce, white calico chemise, man's white vest, and a pair of man's lace-up boots. Around her neck was a piece of red gauze silk with cuts. She also had quite a few knick-knacks in her possession, such as a bloody handkerchief, linens, rags, two clay pipes, and a comb, among other things (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Gordon, 2001; Sugden, 2002; Begg, 2003).

The body appeared to have been posed. The victim was lying on her back with her head turned to the left shoulder. The arms were by her side as if they had fallen there with the palms upward. A thimble was lying off the finger on the right side. The clothes were drawn up over the abdomen and her thighs were naked. There was great disfigurement of her face, and her throat was cut, with a neckerchief tied below the cut. Her intestines were drawn out and placed over her right shoulder and smeared with fecal matter. One piece of intestine was detached from her body and placed between her body and left arm. The lobe and auricle of her right ear was cut obliquely through. There was blood clotted on the pavement and her body was warm, indicating that she may have been dead for approximately half an hour (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Evans & Skinner, 2001; Sugden, 2002).

The autopsy report showed that the body was missing the left kidney and the uterus, but the mutilation gave no evidence that it was done by a skilled hand. The left renal artery was also severed. The mortuary examination revealed a green discoloration over the abdomen of the victim and a bruise the size of a six-pence on her left hand. There were several cuts on the face and a deep cut into the bridge of her nose. The tip of the nose and a portion of her lip were cut off. Her throat was cut to the vertebrae. The cause of death was determined to be the severance of the left carotid artery. Death was immediate, and the mutilation to the body was performed after death.

Several stab wounds were present, one in the liver and another in the left groin. The left kidney had been carefully removed. The vagina and cervix of the womb were uninjured, but the majority of the womb was removed. A

sharp knife, about six-inches long, inflicted the wounds (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Gordon, 2001; Sugden, 2002).

Details of the Mary Jane Kelly Case

On Friday, November 9, 1888, the mutilated body of a woman was found inside a room of a house at No. 26 Dorset Street, Spitalfields at approximately 10:45 A.M. The victim was identified as Marie Jeanette Kelly or Davies, commonly known as Mary Jane Kelly, a known prostitute. Kelly was 24 to 25 years old, five feet seven inches tall, slim, blonde headed, of fresh complexion, and attractive. She was known to drink heavily, but was not known to be helpless when she drank. She was last seen wearing a red pelerine, a dark shabby skirt, a velvet bodice, and a shawl (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Smithkey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Gordon, 2001; Begg, 2003).

The entrance to the apartment of the deceased was located between No. 26 and No. 28 Dorset Street at the end of a cul-de-sac known as Miller's court. The apartment was located on the ground floor of a three-story house. In the court, there were six houses let out in tenements. On the right side of the passage, there were two doors, the first leading to the upper floors. The second door opened into Kelly's apartment. The apartment was about fifteen-feet square and was located toward the back of the building. There were two windows looking into a yard. Opposite the yard there was a side wall formed by houses. On the left side of the court, it was possible to secure a view in a diagonal direction of the larger window and the doorway belonging to the victim. There was a bed behind the door and parallel to the window. The only other furniture was a table and two chairs. A window was broken and blood was on the glass (Evans & Skinner, 2000; Sugden, 2002).

The victim was stretched out on the bed, lying on her back, and had been mutilated. Her nose and ears had been cut off and the flesh had been stripped off of her body leaving the skeleton. One or more organs appeared to be missing. Some of the body parts had been excised and placed on the table. She had been disemboweled and her organs placed around her. There was comparatively little blood at the scene, and death appeared to be caused by the severing of the throat. A large knife had been used, but no weapon was found. There was no sign of a struggle. Women's garments had been carefully arranged and placed by the fireplace (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Sugden, 2002; Begg, 2003).

The surface of her abdomen and of her thighs were removed, and her abdominal cavity had been emptied of viscera. The uterus and kidneys were found, along with one breast, under her head. Her other breast was found by her right foot, and her liver between her feet. Her intestines were placed by her right side, and her spleen was placed by the left side of her body. The flaps removed from her abdomen and thighs were found on the table. Her face was

mutilated beyond recognition, and her neck was severed to the bone. Further examination revealed that the pericardium had been opened and her heart had been removed. Her heart was not present at the scene (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Sugden, 2002; Begg, 2003).

The victim was wearing a linen undergarment. The bed linens were saturated with blood. There was a pool of blood covering two square feet on the floor beneath the bed. The wall by the right side of the bed, in line with the victim's neck, was marked with blood in a number of separate splashes (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Sugden, 2002; Begg, 2003).

The coroner reported that the face of the victim was gashed in all directions. The nose, cheeks, eyebrows, and ears were partially removed. The lips were blanched and cut with several incisions. There were a number of cuts across all features. The neck was cut to the vertebrae and the 5th and 6th vertebrae were deeply notched. The skin cuts in front of the neck showed distinct ecchymosis. The air passage was cut at the lower part of the larynx through the cricoid cartilage (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Gordon, 2001; Sugden, 2002).

Both breasts were removed by circular incisions; the muscles down to the ribs were attached to the breasts. The skin and tissues of the abdomen from the coastal arch to the pubic area were removed in large flaps. The right thigh was denuded in front to the bone, including the external organs of reproduction and part of the right buttock. The left thigh was stripped of skin, fascia, and muscles to the knee. The left calf showed a long gash through skin and tissues to the deep muscles and reached past the knee to five inches above the ankle.

Both arms and forearms had extensive and jagged wounds. The right thumb had a superficial incision about one inch long and there were abrasions on the back of the hand. The lower part of the right lung was broken and torn away; the left lung was intact. Some of the mutilations had been performed postmortem. The cause of death was attributed to blood loss from the severed right carotid artery (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Smithkey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Gordon, 2001; Sugden, 2002).

Details of the Rose Mylett Case

The body of another woman was discovered by a constable in Clark's Yard on High Street in Poplar on December 20, 1888, at approximately 4:00 A.M. The body was still warm, indicating that the woman had not been dead long. The victim's face was placid, with her eyes and mouth closed. The body was lying on its side in a position of natural repose, her arms at rest with her hands open. Her clothing was not disarranged, and a loosely folded handkerchief was around her neck, but not tied. There was a small, empty vial in her pocket. One of her earrings was missing. There were no signs of struggle and no marks of violence. The body was apparently moved from the scene

before marks of strangulation could be found. The victim was later identified as Rose Mylett alias Catherine Millett, Lizzie Davis or Davies, and sometimes known as "Drunken Lizzie Davis" by friends (Evans & Skinner, 2000; Gordon, 2001).

Mylett had not been seen by her family for more than a week before her death. Mylett, a known prostitute, was last seen in the company of two sailors early in the morning of her death at 7:55 P.M. She evidently angered the sailors when she refused to accompany them. She was sober at the time (Evans & Skinner, 2000; Gordon, 2001).

Although there was some speculation that it was an accidental death, the coroner concluded that the victim had been strangled with a thin four-lag cord. Marks of strangulation were visible on the throat and neck. Considerable force had been used, but no mutilation was present (Evans & Skinner, 2000; Gordon, 2001).

Details of the Alice McKenzie Case

The body of a woman was found on July 17, 1889, shortly after 12:48 A.M. at the bottom of Castle Alley in Whitechapel. It was raining heavily at that time. The body was still warm. The victim's throat had been cut and she was lying on her right side with her clothing pulled up to her waist, exposing her abdomen. Her eyes were open and her pupils were dilated. Part of the top of her thumb was missing as well as a tooth in the upper jaw. There was a pool of blood under her head in the footway. When the body was removed, the location was searched, and an old clay pipe smeared with blood and a farthing were found lying under the body.

The woman was later identified as Alice McKenzie, a known prostitute. She was approximately 39 or 40 years old and five feet four inches tall. She had a pale complexion and brown hair and eyes. She was known to drink and smoke. She was wearing a red dress with a stuff bodice, patched under the arms, and sleeves with maroon-colored material. She had one black and one maroon stocking, a brown stuff skirt, kilted brown linsey petticoat, white chemise and apron, paisley shawl, and button boots; all old and dirty. Witnesses had passed through Castle Alley at 12:20 A.M. and 12:30 A.M., and not seen the body, which placed the time of murder between 12:30 and 12:34 A.M. (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Gordon, 2001).

The coroner concluded that the injuries and cuts were not as severe as in the previous cases. The knife was plunged deeply into the neck on the left side of the victim below the sternomastoid muscle and brought out by a tailored incision just above the larynx on the same side. There were two stab wounds and some superficial cuts. The two main cuts were about three inches long and appeared to be inflicted by a sharp knife. No opinion could be given as to the length of the knife. The cuts were made from the front while the woman's

head was thrown back above the ground. There were two bruises high up on the chest, which suggested that the murderer made the cuts with his right hand while he held the woman with his left hand. There were no bruises on the woman's face and neck (Evans & Skinner, 2000).

There was a jagged incision made up of several cuts extending from the chest to below the belly button. The incision extended through the skin and the subcutaneous fat. At the bottom of the cut there were seven or eight superficial scratches about two inches long, parallel to each other, in a longitudinal direction. The abdominal cavity was not opened. There was a small cut an eighth of an inch deep and a quarter of an inch long on the mons veneris. There were multiple cutting marks in the pubic area. They appeared to be inflicted by a right-handed person while he lifted her clothing. A small bruise was located on the left side of the stomach. The eyes and sex organs were mutilated. The throat wound caused immediate death. Because of the warmth of her body at discovery, the time of death was estimated to be close to 12:40 A.M. on July 17, 1889 (Evans & Skinner, 2000).

Details of the Unknown Woman Case

On Tuesday, September 10, 1889, a female torso was found under a railway arch in Pinchin Street, St Georges-in-the-East, at approximately 5:20 or 5:30 A.M. There was no evidence of any blood or footmarks at the scene. The trunk was identified as belonging to a woman between 35 and 40 years old. The woman would have been about five feet three inches tall, with a stout build. She had a dark complexion and her hair was dark brown. Both elbows were discolored as if from a habit of leaning on them, but her nails were well groomed (Evans & Skinner, 2000; Gordon, 2001).

No items used to transport the trunk were left at the scene. The area was remote; no habitations were located in the area. The area was faced by a wooden fence and flanked by a dead wall. The arch was the only one left open; the others were boarded or covered with doors (Paley, 1996). A portion of a blood-stained undergarment was found at 7:30 A.M. in a vacant yard on Hooper Street, five hundred yards away. The stains on it were old and dried, matching the stains on the chemise on the torso.

About eighteen feet from the roadway and about a foot from the right wall of the arch, the remains were laying face down, with the head and legs removed. The head of the body had been cut off by clean, right-handed cuts. The vertebrae had been "jointed" with blood oozing from them. Both legs had also been "jointed" by right hand cuts, but dismemberment had taken place earlier than the dismemberment of the head, since the raw flesh had dried and been blackened by exposure. The wound beginning on the lower part of the sternum, cutting through the skin and fatty substance, penetrated the bowels and uterus slightly and extended to the left side of the labia major. There were

marks on the waist that appeared to have been caused by a rope postmortem. The trunk showed signs of decomposition (Evans & Skinner, 2000).

A chemise on the torso was cut at the arms and down the front. There was a small semicircular cut on the index finger of the right hand, and bruises on both arms. A ring may have caused the marking on the fingers. There was nothing on the trunk that could identify the victim (Evans & Skinner, 2000).

The surroundings suggested that death occurred elsewhere, somewhere between one and five days before the discovery of the trunk. The trunk was full of blood, indicating that a hemorrhage had not occurred. This also indicated that the throat could not have been cut. There was no evidence of recent sexual activity or an attack on the genital area. The cut toward the vagina gave the appearance that the knife had slipped. The cuts on the body appeared to have been caused by a left-handed individual. The cuts were sharp and were skillfully done, but did not necessarily indicate anatomic knowledge. The cause of death was determined as syncope, as shown by the condition of the heart and the general bloodlessness of the tissues, indicating massive hemorrhage (Evans & Skinner, 2000).

Details of the Frances Coles Case

The body of a woman was found on Friday, February 13, 1891, lying in the roadway in Swallow Gardens, Royal Mint Street, Whitechapel. The body was discovered at approximately 2:15 A.M. by a police constable. The victim was still alive when discovered, with blood issuing from her throat, but died shortly after the constable found her. The victim was later identified as Frances Coles. Coles was approximately 26 years old, approximately five feet tall, and with brown hair and brown eyes. No other identifying information was available.

Two cuts were found in her throat, sufficient to account for death. The body was not mutilated in any other way. The area was carefully searched, and two shillings (wrapped in two pieces of old newspaper) were found in a space between a water pipe and some brickwork about eighteen yards from where the body was found. No other evidence was found at the scene of the murder (Evans & Gainey, 1998; Evans & Skinner, 2000; Gordon, 2001; Sugden, 2002).

Crime Scene Characteristics and Assessment

For the purposes of this study, crime scene characteristics will be reviewed to identify modus operandi (M.O.) and *signature* characteristics. M.O.

characteristics refer to the offender's actions during the commission of a crime that are necessary to complete the crime. Experience and confidence will shape and modify an offender's M.O. Signature characteristics, or a killer's calling card, are those actions that are unique to the offender and go beyond what is necessary to kill the victim. Although the M.O. can change over time and reflect the nature of the *crime*, signature characteristics remain stable and reflect the nature of *offender*. Although an offender's signature may evolve, the core features of the signature will remain constant (Douglas & Munn, 1992a; 1992b; Keppel, 1995a; 1995b; Douglas & Olshaker, 1997; Geberth, 1996; 2003; Keppel & Birnes, 1997; Keppel, 2000; 2004).

Signature analysis is a widely used crime scene assessment practice in the United States, and is the only crime scene assessment technique that is accepted in court testimony and appellate decisions (*State of Delaware v. Steven B. Pennell*, 1989; *State of California v. Cleophus Prince*, 1992; Keppel & Weis, 1993a; *State of Louisiana v. Nathanial Code*, 1994; *State of Washington v. George Russell*, 1994). What follows is a discussion that summarizes the M.O. and signature characteristics of the Whitechapel murders. The main question addressed, based on the apparent M.O. and, particularly, signature characteristics, is which of the Whitechapel murders are linked and attributable to the same killer?*

It is important to note the distinction between the killer's M.O. and signature. The killer's M.O. in six of the Whitechapel cases evolved as he gained experience and learned what he liked and didn't like. For example, in the Mary Kelly case, she was killed indoors, at her residence, whereas the other murders occurred outside. This represented a change in the killer's M.O., to decrease the chance for interruption, and to allow for more time with the victim after death. However, the killer's signature characteristics did *not* change, and the evidence demonstrates that the same person murdered Tabram, Nichols, Chapman, Stride, Eddowes, and Kelly. The murders

* There are a number of contemporary methods of linking cases, most of which were unavailable and/or inapplicable at the time of the Ripper murders. Most of them depend on having evidence on a viable suspect—for examples, DNA, fingerprints, trace evidence, and so on—who may be linked to shared victims based on that information. Without that kind of evidence or a viable suspect, as in the Whitechapel murders, the connection among victims must be based on more rudimentary information, gleaned from the crime scenes, witnesses, and coroners. Geographical profiling may be useful in describing the ecology of victimization, but it will not connect the individual victims. As one would expect, the locations of the Whitechapel victims are confined to a relatively small area, one that would be accessible by someone who was most likely, at that time in that neighborhood in London, to be on foot, and who would not be transporting bodies any distance. Even among contemporary serial killers, they contact, kill, and dispose of victims within a relatively small circumscribed area, despite their ability to separate contact, murder, and disposal sites by transporting victims in automobiles (Keppel & Weis, 1994).

of Smith, Mylett, McKenzie, the unidentified victim, and Coles could not be linked through signature analysis to other cases.

Modus Operandi Characteristics

In the six linked cases, the killer's M.O. included attacks on white, female prostitutes, typically between 24 and 45 years old. He preyed on women who were poor. The evidence shows that when the women hiked their skirts in preparation for sex, the killer grabbed their throats and strangled them. The victims were then lowered to the ground with their heads typically pointing to the killer's left. This is supported by the lack of bruising on their heads as noted in the coroners' reports.

The killer preferred to commit his crime in the darkest hours, attacking his victims between midnight and 6:00 A.M. The murders usually occurred in the latter part of the week. The six murders occurred in a three-month period, between August 7, 1888 and November 9, 1888. The murders were located within a one-mile square area. Each successive murder, from Smith to Kelly, was less than a mile from the previous murder site, with the murders of Stride and Eddowes less than half a mile apart. The victims were not transported to another location after death but were left where they were killed.

The weapon used in the murders was a sharpened long knife. The victims were already dead or unconscious from manual strangulation before their throats were cut. The women's throats were cut from the left side while they were on the ground rather than while standing. This is evidenced by the lack of blood on their clothing and is supported by the coroner's reports.

In the first murder victim linked to *Jack the Ripper*, Martha Tabram, the killer attacked her from the front. Because of the stabbing frenzy, this assault would have left the killer literally soaked in the victim's blood, increasing the likelihood of being discovered. He learned quickly and adapted his M.O. to attack the victims from behind and slash their throat, as in the Nichols, Chapman, Stride, Eddowes, and Kelly cases, so as to incapacitate the victim, diminish the amount of blood on his apparel, and/or decrease the chances of discovery.

Victims Tabram, Nichols, Chapman, Stride, and Eddowes were all attacked outdoors. When the opportunity presented itself, however, the killer moved indoors, into Kelly's residence, to carry out a more brutal and time-consuming experience in private. This is not a significant deviation from his characteristic pattern, but rather a natural progression of the killer's needs. In several of the murders, that of Stride and Eddowes in particular, the killer had been interrupted by the arrival of witnesses on the scene (Evans & Skinner, 2000). And the killer changed his M.O. during the murder of Mary

Jane Kelly, in that the murder took place indoors and the victim was attacked from the front as she was lying in bed.

Signature Characteristics

The killer's signature is organized around the sexualized violence committed against his victims. The main components of *Jack the Ripper*'s signature include the control of the victim and progressive picquerism. Picquerism is deriving sexual pleasure through stabbing, cutting, or slicing another person or by observing these actions (Geberth, 1996; Keppel & Birnes, 1997; Keppel, 2004).

Although some serial killers achieve sexual satisfaction through primary mechanisms (e.g., sexual assault), others resort to secondary mechanisms related to violence. It is likely that *Jack the Ripper* utilized the violence of stabbing and slashing his victims with a knife as methods for exerting his power and control over the victim. He used a knife to penetrate the victim, and satisfied himself through the eroticized power of violence, the domination of the victim, and the mutilation and bleeding of the victim, rather than through sexual intercourse.

Signature Analysis

Based on the analyses**,** the following discussion summarizes the signature of the killer in six of the eleven Whitechapel murders. It is not evident in the other five of them. More specifically, what features distinguish the signature of *Jack the Ripper*?

First, picquerism is evident in the proliferation of stabbing and cutting wounds to each victim. Although not all of the victims received the same number and type of injuries, the picquerism remained constant as the killer progressed across a continuum of escalating violence. He moved from stabbing the breast and genital areas in the Tabram case, to mutilating these areas in the Nichols case, to harvesting organs in the Chapman and Kelly cases. In all cases there was no evidence of sexual intercourse or sexual activity, but the sexual component of picquerism is evident, as well as other secondary deviations in the form of more and more mutilation and, eventually, evisceration and organ removal.

Second, the murders of Tabram, Nichols, Chapman, Stride, Eddowes, and Kelly demonstrated the killer's need to completely incapacitate his victims and gain their immediate submission. His attacks—from the multiple stab wounds, the near-severing of the head from the body by slashing the throat, the number of localized areas of brutalization, and the excessive mutilation—all indicated the killer's need to immediately incapacitate, subdue, and silence all six victims before committing additional degrading bru-

tality against their bodies. In the Stride murder the killer was interrupted, so additional brutality did not occur.

Third, characteristic of this killer's signature was overkill, to have complete control and domination over his victims. *Jack the Ripper* administered an excessive number of fatal wounds, which went above and beyond what was necessary to kill the victims.

Fourth, the victims were left in the open and on display in an effort to further degrade them and shock those who discovered the bodies. No efforts were made to hide or dispose of the victims. The first five victims were intentionally left in outdoor locations. In the Kelly case, he left the victim in her own room where she would be found by anyone searching for her. In fact, this killer obviously left the victims where others would find them. The flaunting of the bodies in public places suggests that he believed himself invincible, in control, and beyond the reach of the police and public who were beneath him. He made it clear that his victims were completely vulnerable, and he discarded their bodies for anyone to find.

Fifth, the characteristic of posing was evident in the *Jack the Ripper* murders. In all of the cases, except when the killer was interrupted in the Stride case, he left the bodies posed flat on their backs. Stride was dropped on her side initially, and then left lying flat on her back with her wounds exposed. He often left the victims' legs splayed and their genitalia exposed in a sexually degrading manner, such as in the Tabram, Chapman, Eddowes, and Kelly murders. Each murder had some element of posing, from the arrangement of clothes, the placement of a thimble, the splaying of legs, to the arrangement of organs, intestines, and tissues. In each case a pattern of successive efforts to pose the body was obvious. These efforts to pose the body became more blatant as the series progressed. In summary, the posing indicated that the killer intentionally left his victims in sexually degrading positions to emphasize that he considered them disposable.

Sixth, as *Jack the Ripper* spent more time undetected with his victims, his violence escalated to include postmortem mutilation and the harvesting of organs. Although the need to inflict excessive injury and blood loss occurred early in his series, the Ripper's technique broadened to mutilation, the removal of organs, and amputation of body parts. Throughout the series, the killer targeted specific areas of attack for mutilation, focusing on the breasts, genitalia, abdomen, and neck. As evidenced in the Kelly murder, the killer amputated the victim's breasts and attempted to amputate the legs at the thigh and knee. Similar mutilations and efforts to amputate were visible in the Eddowes case. In fact, efforts to mutilate can be traced back to the Nichols and Tabram cases, as well as forward to the Kelly murder.

The removal of organs and their placement at the scene was also part of the evolution of the killer's signature. The killer cut and mutilated most bodies after death. This evolved into removing organs and placing viscera outside

the body at the scene of the murder. The mutilation was another element in destroying the humanity of his victim and attempting to shock and horrify those who found the bodies. With the exception of the interrupted murder of Elizabeth Stride, all of these cases contained characteristics of excessive pre- and/or postmortem mutilation.

Seventh, the attacks were planned. The killer brought his weapon to the crime scene, and he took it with him when he left. It is unlikely that he needed to use the weapon to instill a sense of fear and force compliance from the victim, since they were incapacitated quickly through stabbing and cutting. The body recovery site in the *Jack the Ripper* cases was the same as the murder site and initial assault site. No evidence was left at the scene by the killer, which also shows pre-planning and organization.

The absence of a struggle with the victims shows pre-planning and experience on the part of the killer. His planning was also evidenced in his choice of public murder sites that allowed him to conduct his crimes largely undetected and to slip away unnoticed in high traffic areas. In the Chapman and Eddowes cases, the killer was taking more time to mutilate and harvest the organs of his victims. The extreme mutilation to Kelly's body required continuous and uninterrupted time. The increasing amount of time spent and the privacy required in committing these murders would necessitate preplanning and prior knowledge and/or familiarity with the murder locations (Canter, 2003).

In the cases of the five other Whitechapel murder victims, they could not be linked to *Jack the Ripper* through signature analysis. The killer(s) of Smith, Mylett, Coles, McKenzie, and the unidentified victim did not engage in the same pattern of escalating signature behaviors exhibited by *Jack the Ripper*, including the careful planning of the murders, picquerism, and the posing and mutilation of victims.

HITS Analysis

Because the signature characteristics of a killer are known to be rare among murderers in general (Geberth, 1996; 2003; Keppel & Birnes, 1997; Keppel, 1995a; 1995b; 2000; 2004), an analysis of all 3359 cases from the Homicide Investigation Tracking System (HITS) that occurred between 1981 and 1995 was conducted to determine the frequency in contemporary murders of the main characteristics observed in the *Jack the Ripper* murders. HITS is a computerized repository of all homicide cases for Washington State (Keppel & Weis, 1993a; 1993b) that have occurred since 1981. The purposes of this analysis were to determine the frequency of:

Table 3.2 Frequency of M.O. and Signature Characteristics in the Whitechapel Murders

Total murders 3,359, 100%
Female victims 1,120, 33%
Stabbing or cutting weapon used 708, 21.1%
Stab wounds 597, 17.8%
Body openly displayed 258, 7.7%
Trophies taken 222, 6.6%
Prostitutes 114, 3.4%
Cutting or incising wounds 91, 2.7%
Unusual body position (staging or posing present) 57, 1.7%
Trauma to neck 60, 1.6%
Trauma to abdomen 52, 1.5%
Explored mutilated cavities 9, 0.3%
Trauma to genitalia 2, 10.1%

1. The individual MO and signature characteristics displayed in the six Whitechapel murders attributed to *Jack the Ripper*; and
2. The combination of MO and signature characteristics displayed in those murders.

Although it is not possible to determine the rarity of the characteristics in murders from 1880s London based on a database from the United States, the rarity of these characteristics occurring together in a murder series is apparent in the HITS data (Table 3.2).

The most significant findings are revealed when analyzing the combinations of victim and crime scene characteristics evident in the Whitechapel cases (Table 3.3). There were only nine cases in the database in which the victim's body was probed, explored, or mutilated, six of them female, and only one being a prostitute. There are only two cases, both female and neither a prostitute, that contain both characteristics of unusual body position

Table 3.3 Frequency of Combination of M.O. and Signature Characteristics in the Whitechapel Murders

All murder cases 3,359, 100%
Prostitute + unusual body position 10, 0.27%
All cases involving probed, explored, or mutilated cavities 9, 0.26%
Female + mutilation 6, 0.17%
Unusual body position + mutilation of body 2, 0.05%
Prostitute + mutilation 1, 0.03%
Prostitute + unusual body position + mutilation of body 0, 0%

and explored, probed, or mutilated body cavities. More significant, there are no cases for which the body of a prostitute displayed both characteristics of unusual body position and explored, probed, or mutilated cavities. The initial analyses demonstrated that many of the individual characteristics and the combination of the signature characteristics observed in the *Jack the Ripper* murders were rare. In fact, murderers who stab and kill female prostitutes, leave their bodies in unusual positions, and probe, explore, or mutilate body cavities are extremely rare. It would be extremely unusual to find more than one of these killers, exhibiting that combination of signature characteristics, operating in the same area at the same time.

Discussion

As shown by the HITS analysis, the signature characteristics observed in the murders of Tabram, Nichols, Chapman, Stride, Eddowes, and Kelly are extremely rare. At the center of *Jack the Ripper's* signature was the display of control over the victim through the use of a knife to penetrate the victims' bodies and desecrate their sexual regions. Five of the six victims were stabbed repeatedly in the genital area. Stabbing and cutting wounds are relatively common in murders, but trauma to the genital area is extremely rare—in less than one-tenth of 1% of all murder cases in the HITS system.

The use of posing and mutilation were also examples of his control over the victims, leaving them on display in sexually degrading positions with the wounds exposed. The scenario revealed in the *Jack the Ripper* murders was so rare that the HITS analysis uncovered *no* cases in which the murder of a prostitute displayed both characteristics of posing and mutilation. In fact, the combination of characteristics of posing and mutilation occurred in only 0.05% of all murder cases.

The victims' bodies and crime scenes revealed this killer's progression across the violence continuum. *Jack the Ripper* progressed from multiple stabbings in the Tabram case; to mutilation in the Nichols case; and the harvesting of organs in the Chapman, Eddowes, and Kelly cases. Each case showed successive violence to the body and increased mutilation, with the exception of the murder of Elizabeth Stride. During the Stride murder the killer was interrupted, which required the killer to finish the job he had started on his next victim, Catherine Eddowes, less than two hours later (Evans & Skinner, 2000; Sugden, 2002; Begg, 2003).

The sexual and control components of these murders, and the element of picquerism, are characteristic of *Jack the Ripper's* signature. At the core of this killer's signature is the expression of sexual violence perpetrated by the stabbing and slashing of his victims. Each victim in this series displays the characteristic of picquerism and the killer's need to dominate the victims.

The killer incapacitated each victim, gaining her submission, exerting complete control over her body, while engaging in actions that amounted to overkill. He then left the victims' bodies open and on display for anyone to find. As time elapsed, his crimes progressed and became more violent, elements of posing became more obvious, and the mutilations became more severe.

The pattern and the signature, however, remained constant. As his needs and desires became stronger, including the need to avoid detection and to sate his sexual appetite, his crimes became more violent and his M.O. adapted accordingly. Although there was no evidence of the primary mechanisms of sexual activity, there was an overriding sexual nature, as evidenced in the signature characteristic of picquerism. Martha Tabram, Mary Ann Nichols, Annie Chapman, Elizabeth Stride, Catherine Eddowes, and Mary Jane Kelly were all victims of the same killer and showed characteristics unique to this killer's signature, as well as to his M.O.

Summary

Typically, in sexually oriented murders, the killer's approach to the victims is predatory. The selection of prostitutes and the location of the murders ensured that *Jack the Ripper* would succeed in carrying out his fantasies. His M.O. contained the actions necessary to commit the murders. *Jack the Ripper* killed within a one square mile in the Whitechapel area between midnight and 6:00 A.M. His victims were all white, female prostitutes between the ages of 24 and 45 years old. He used a knife to stab and cut his six victims. His initial murders were committed outdoors, but he moved indoors with his last known victim. The M.O. of *Jack the Ripper* changed from one murder to the next as the killer learned more effective techniques.

The activities above and beyond what were necessary to murder the victims, were the killer's unique signature. *Jack the Ripper's* signature was clear in six of the Whitechapel murder cases and exhibited the following characteristics: (1) the injuries sustained by the victims displayed the signature characteristic of picquerism; (2) the killer displayed a level of overkill in each case that escalated over the series; (3) the victims were incapacitated immediately and killed quickly to enable the killer to live out his fantasies; (4) the killer exhibited complete domination over each victim; (5) the victims' bodies were left open and on display; (6) the victims in this series were displayed in unusual body positions, revealing signs of posing; (7) the victims were left in sexually degrading positions with their legs spread and genitalia exposed to illustrate their vulnerability after death and the killer's dominance; (8) the killer mutilated his victims and showed increased postmortem mutilation from one victim to the next; (9) the killer evolved to the removal of organs and body parts, and removed some of them from the crime scenes; (10) the

killer targeted specific areas of attack, stabbing and slashing the breasts, genitalia, abdomen, and sexual organs of the victims; (11) the murders were planned and organized; and (12) the combination of these actions created a unique signature with which we can link the six victims of one killer, *Jack the Ripper.*

References

Abrahamsen, D. (1992). *Murder and Madness: The Secret Life of Jack the Ripper*. London: Robson Books.

Begg, P. (2003). *Jack the Ripper: The Definitive History.* London: Pearson Education Unlimited.

Begg, P., Fido, M., & Skinner, K. (1996). *The Jack the Ripper a-z.* London: Headline.

Canter, D. (2003). *Mapping Murder: The Secrets of Geographical Profiling*. London: Virgin Books.

Douglas, J. E. & Munn, C. M. (1992a). Modus operandi and the signature aspects of violent crime. In: J. E. Douglas, A. W. Burgess, A. G. Burgess, et al., eds. *Crime Classification Manual.* (pp. 259–268). New York: Lexington Books.

Douglas, J. E. & Munn, C. M. (1992b). Violent crime scene analysis: Modus operandi, signature, and staging. *FBI Law Enforcement Bulletin*, February. Retrieved 2 June 2004, from http://www.fbi.gov/library/leb/leb.htm

Douglas, J. E. & Olshaker, M. (1997). *Journey into Darkness.* New York: Scribner.

Emmerichs, M. B. (2001). Getting away with murder? Homicide and the coroners in nineteenth century London. *Social Science History* 25, 93–100.

Evans, S. & Gainey, P. (1998). *Jack the Ripper: First American Serial Killer.* New York: Kodansha America, Inc.

Evans, S. P. & Skinner, K. (2000). *The Ultimate Jack the Ripper Companion*. New York: Carroll & Graf Publishers, Inc.

Evans, S. P. & Skinner, K. (2001). *Jack the Ripper: Letters from Hell.* Stroud, U.K.: Sutton Publishing, Ltd.

Fido, M. (1993). *The Crimes, Detection, and Death of Jack the Ripper*. New York: Barnes and Nobles Books.

Geberth, V. J. (1996). *Practical Homicide Investigation.* New York: CRC Press.

Geberth, V. J. (2003). *Sex-Related Homicide and Death Investigation*. New York: CRC Press.

Gordon, R. M. (2001). *Alias Jack the Ripper: Beyond the Usual Whitechapel Suspects*. Jefferson, North Carolina: McFarland & Company.

Keppel, R. D. (1995a). Signature murders: A report of several related cases. *Journal of Forensic Sciences* 40, 670–674.

Keppel, R. D. (1995b). *The Riverman*. New York: Pocket Books.

Keppel, R. D. (2000). Signature murders: A report of the 1984 Cranbrook, British Columbia cases. *Journal of Forensic Sciences* 45, 500–503.

Keppel, R. D. (2004). *Offender Profiling.* Mason, Ohio: Thomson Custom Publishing.

Keppel, R. D. & Birnes W. J. (1997). *Signature Killers.* New York: Pocket Books.

Keppel, R. D. & Weis, J. G. (1993a). HITS: Catching criminals in the Northwest. *FBI Law Enforcement Bulletin*. 42, 14–19. 20 R. D. Keppel et al. Copyright © 2005 John Wiley & Sons, Ltd. *Journal of Investigative Psychology and Offender Profiling*, 2, 1–21 (2005)

Keppel, R.D., & Weis, J.G. (1993b, August). Improving the investigation of violent crime: The homicide investigation and tracking system. *Research in Brief,* National Institute of Justice, Washington, D.C.

Keppel, R .D. & Weis, J. G. (1994). Time and distance as solvability factors in murder investigations. *Journal of Forensic Sciences* 39, 386–400.

Paley, B. (1996). *Jack the Ripper: The Simple Truth.* London: Headline.

Smithkey, J. (1998). *Jack the Ripper: The Inquest of the Final Victim Mary Kelly.* North Canton, OH: Key Publications.

State of California v. Cleophus Prince (1992). 9 Cal. App. 4th 1176, 10 CAL.RPTR.2D855

State of Delaware v. Steven B. Pennell (1989). Del. Super., 584 A 2d 513.

State of Louisiana v. Nathaniel Code (1994). 627 So. 2d 1373.

State of Washington v. George W. Russell (1994). 125 Wash.2d 24, 882 P.2D 7474.

Sugden, P. (2002). *The Complete History of Jack the Ripper.* London: Constable & Robinson, Ltd.

The Essence of Torture

4

Introduction

At about the same time Morris Frampton was operating in the Pacific Northwest, another series of attempted and successful murders began on the East Coast that would put into sharp focus just what a signature killer does and how he behaves. Many people heard about this case through the newspapers because it was a lurid, bloody series of crimes that initially left police dazed by the level of the killer's violence.

In reality, killer Richard Cottingham belonged to a subgroup of sexually sadistic serial killers who try to satisfy their self-consuming need for sexual arousal through torturing their victims. The victim's pain and terror are a stimulus to the killer, driving him into a greater frenzy that only serves to intensify the level of the victim's torture until the killer's lust is momentarily satisfied. To get to this level of sexual gratification, torture-killers are most adept at luring victims, capturing them, and then springing their traps. Most are smooth talkers and beguilingly charming, but deceitful and ultimately lethal. Torture-killers use all sorts of conventional and innovative approaches to con their victims into a false feeling of safety. They flatter and flirt, offer rewards—especially money—hold out the promise of satisfying exactly what they perceive the victim wants, and speak directly to the victim's needs.

The set-up for the trap can range anywhere from a few minutes of casual conversation to an elaborate ritual. It's all a ruse made to look innocent to trick a potential victim into stepping into the killer's world. Once the victim is isolated and completely under the predator's control, the killer begins the process of orchestrating "the three D's" of a sadistic killer: (1) dependency, in which the victim is forced to rely upon the killer for each moment of life while in captivity; (2) dread, in which the victim is terrified at the pain and torture being inflicted; and (3) degradation of the victim at the hands of the assailant. Frequently the killer utilizes drugs to incapacitate his victims.

The killer's goal is to eclipse and ritualistically take total command over his victim. To facilitate his perversion, he will use various props, such as leather slave collars, handcuffs, cigarette lighters, whips, and adhesive or duct tape. New York Police Department (NYPD) retired commander Vernon Geberth wrote extensively about the Mid-Town Torso case in his textbook *Practical Homicide Investigation*. Here, control freak Richard Cottingham was

described as a classic example of this type of killer, and the study of his crimes illuminated further the path into the dark world of a serial killer subtype.

Richard Cottingham Murders

Over a period of several years, beginning in 1977 and extending through 1980, a series of frightful crimes against women terrorized New York City and northern New Jersey. Several of the women were found alive, having suffered vicious sexual assaults, and others had been found slain, their corpses strangled, mutilated, and bitten, in non-paradisiacal motels along West 42nd Street in New York City and in similar cheap residences in upstate New Jersey. The victims were white females in their 20s. Although police from those interstate jurisdictions did not immediately affix responsibility to the efforts of one person, New York City detectives suspected that three of the deaths in their jurisdiction could be related.

The murders were savage, seemingly committed to rid the world of prostitutes or prostitute lookalikes and act-a-likes. These were not cruel pranks of fate, but the creation of a perverted man's vivid fantasy life. The victims—prostitutes, "working girls," or tavern-sitters who appeared to be on the prowl for male clients, were completely oblivious to the motive of the male companion they chose for company, who was to become the agent of their deaths. The first known case in the series started with the brutal sex slaying of Maryann Carr.

Murder of Maryann Carr

At approximately 7:00 A.M. on December 16, 1977, the body of Maryann Carr was discovered between a parked van and a chainlink fence at the southern boundary of the Quality Inn parking lot in Ledgewood Terrace, New Jersey. Her body was about 60 feet across from the rear southwest entrance of the parking lot. She was clothed in a white nurse's uniform, which had a cut in the left pant leg made by a sharp instrument. On her right thigh, there was a clump of her hair that had also been cut by a sharp instrument. Her white nurse's shoes were missing, as were her coat and handbag. At the time of her death, Maryann Carr was 26 years old, 5 feet 5 inches tall, 115 pounds, and had artificially treated blond hair. She lived at the nearby Ledgewood Terrace Apartments (Denning, 1978; Calo, 1981).

The police discovered that Maryann Carr sustained lacerations to her chest and feet caused by a sharp instrument. Marks on her wrists and ankles were easily recognized as ligature indentations, consistent with being handcuffed. A careful examination of her body revealed that there was residue of white adhesive tape that had been stretched across her mouth. She had been

strangled with a ligature similar to a thin rope or cord that left a mark on the right lateral aspect to her neck. There were recent bruises on her shoulders, arms, and thighs, and also on her right breast. The left occipital bone had a hemorrhage consistent with a blow from a blunt instrument. The cause of death was mechanical asphyxia, a combination of suffocation by the adhesive tape and the ligature strangulation. Dr. John Apovian, medical examiner, testified that of all the autopsies done in Bergen County over the last several years, only Maryann Carr and Valerie Ann Street, who would be found similarly murdered later, had the residue of adhesive tape and handcuffing on their wrists (Calo, 1981).

Maryann Carr was last seen in the parking lot of her apartment speaking to a man who looked like her husband, a white male, 32 years old, with light brown hair. Testimony indicated that Maryann Carr was forcibly abducted from her apartment after returning home from work. The keys to her apartment building were found in Richard Cottingham's home after his arrest on May 22, 1980 (Denning, 1978; Calo, 1981).

Attempted Murder of Karen Schilt

As the night of March 22, 1978 began, little did Karen Schilt realize that she would be left alive in torment and discarded like garbage in the parking lot of Ledgewood Terrace. Her account of what happened was absent of the most lurid details, but was the best she could recall under the circumstances. All day, until 6 o'clock in the evening, she worked at Tuesday's, a restaurant-tavern located on Third Avenue near E. 17th St. in New York City. From there, the pregnant young woman briefly visited her boyfriend at a nearby hospital and returned to Tuesday's to work until 8 o'clock. She had two drinks at the bar and left for another Third Avenue tavern, where she had two more drinks. It was there that she met a man who called himself Joseph or John Schaefer. During the conversation, Schaefer was curious about his companion and asked Schilt if she was a "working girl," slang for prostitute. She said no, but it did not alter Schaefer's interest in her. Karen's description of Schaefer offered no unique features that would set him apart from most white males in the area, clean-shaven, about 30 years old, 5 feet 8 inches to 5 feet 10 inches tall, medium to heavy build, with straight hair parted on the left side. She realized that, at some time in her conversation with him, he claimed to live in New Jersey, near Hackensack, but he frequented bars on Third Avenue in New York City, a thoroughfare that, below 34th Street, was known as a hangout for streetwalkers (Fallon, 1980; Calo, 1980; 1981).

At about 9 o'clock and very soon into her conversation with Schaefer, Karen felt sick, much like one would feel after having been drugged. She put down the drink she had been sipping, left Schaefer at the bar, and walked toward her apartment at 94 Third Avenue. Schaefer followed her outside and,

feigning a gentlemanly concern, tagged along behind her in his car until he saw her weaving. He stopped, opened the door, and asked her if she "wished a ride home." She said yes, stumbled inside the car, and, almost immediately, lost consciousness as she sank into the softness of the of the passenger seat (Fallon, 1980; Calo, 1980; 1981).

Karen didn't know how long they'd been driving, but when she awoke and regained some of her faculties, she knew that they were nowhere near her apartment. In fact, when she looked around, she found they were driving along Route 80 in New Jersey. Schaefer then asked her if she had taken Tuinal. When she said no, he forced her to swallow three bluish and red Tuinal capsules. Very quickly, she passed out once again.

According to the *Physicians' Desk Reference*, Tuinal is a combination of equal parts of seconal sodium and amytal sodium, barbituric acid derivatives that occur as white, odorless, bitter powders. They are very soluble in water and alcohol. Tuinal is a central nervous system depressant, and, in ordinary doses, the drug acts as a hypnotic. Its onset of action occurs in 15 to 30 minutes, and the duration of action ranges from 3 to 11 hours. Prolonged, uninterrupted use of Tuinal may result in psychic and physical dependence. Before Rohypnol, Tuinal was the date-rape drug of choice (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

The next thing Karen Schilt recalled was awakening in the dark and feeling a burning sensation to her breast caused by Schaefer. In the midst of her turmoil, she heard Schaefer tell her that he currently lived, or had once lived, at the place where they were. Then Karen passed out again and only recalled awakening in Hackensack Hospital. She felt as if she were in a physical and mental cocoon and had no idea what had happened to her the night before or how close she had come to death (Fallon, 1980; Calo, 1980; 1981).

At 7 o'clock in the morning of March 23, 1978, Patrolman Raymond Auger discovered the almost lifeless form of Karen Schilt, who the night before had been a lively, vibrant woman casually chatting up people she'd met at her neighborhood bar. Now, she was lying in a parking lot, totally reduced to a near-death by someone who was nothing more than a feral predator, a signature killer. An officer with the Little Ferry Police Department, Auger had received a radio message directing him to the Ledgewood Terrace Apartment complex on Liberty Street, which runs north–south off Route 46, a mile from the intersection with Route 80. The location of the Ledgewood Terrace Apartments was important because it revealed a pattern of a killer who was using the same dump site for victims, one abducted from the streets of New York City miles away, and the other a resident of that apartment complex. As the patrolman entered the eastern parking lot area, he saw a car parked facing a stockade fence. Partially hidden underneath that parked car was Karen Schilt. She was unconscious, with her blouse pulled above her breasts and her slacks undone and pulled down to her knees. Karen resembled all other women attacked or murdered in this series: 22 years of age, 5 feet 5

inches tall, about 140 pounds, blue eyes, and artificially colored blond hair. She was missing her coat, purse, scarf, and a large silver ring (Fallon, 1980; Calo, 1980; 1981).

Patrolman Auger checked the condition of the woman, noted her especially weak pulse and shallow breathing, and radioed for an ambulance. When it arrived, he aided rescue personnel in administering oxygen and cardiac massage to Karen in an attempt to revive her. After several moments, they encouraged a faint heartbeat and sped to Hackensack Hospital, where the admitting physician documented her extensive injuries. What monster could have done something like this? The unidentified woman had bruises on her legs and trauma to her elbow, her breasts had been severely scratched and her left breast had been burnt by a cigarette and savagely bitten, exactly as in the case of Maryann Carr. The doctors found the cause of her unconscious condition in their initial blood analysis, which revealed the presence of ethyl alcohol and the drugs amobarbital and secobarbital, the two constituents of the capsules commonly known as Tuinal. But she was alive and would eventually survive the ordeal. She had only vague memories of the night before and could only remember feeling sick and weak and then riding in a car. The police investigation of the Karen Schilt case did not develop any viable leads and would remain inactive until Richard Cottingham's arrest in 1980 (Fallon, 1980; Calo, 1980; 1981).

Susan Geiger

On October 10, 1978, blonde, 5-foot-tall Susan Geiger was hooking along Eighth Avenue near the Alpine Hotel in New York City. At 96 pounds, she was cute and petite. This area, right around the theatre district, was notorious, and still is today, for its high rate of prostitution, sex shops, and x-rated pornographic movie theatres. If you were a hooker you didn't have to wait long for a trick, and Susan was soon approached by a white male she described as about 5 feet 10 inches tall, 170 pounds, with blue eyes, dirty blond hair, and no facial hair. The anxious "john" offered Geiger a flat $200 for sex that night, but she told him it was a no-go. She was all booked that evening. So she gave him her telephone number and told him to call the next day if he wanted her. He called on October 11 and made a date.

Unknowingly, Susan Geiger had become a pawn in a very common ruse used by serial killers who target prostitutes. Richard Hansen from Alaska, the killer of eleven prostitutes, obtained telephone numbers of potential victims and called each of them later for a date. Then he would stake out the area where he was to meet them in advance of their appointment to assure himself that no one followed these women to the meeting site. Once convinced that he had successfully isolated his victim, he picked her up and her fate was sealed (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

At midnight, Susan Geiger met her trick in front of the Alpine Motel. They drove cross-town through theatre district traffic over to Flanagan's tavern, located on First Avenue between 65th and 66th Streets, just north of the Queensboro Bridge and the Roosevelt Island tram. It was in Flanagan's that the man finally introduced himself as Jim, and told her he was married with young children and living over in New Jersey. He claimed that he worked with computers somewhere nearby "in the forties" streets and that he'd just gotten off work. He bragged to her that he just won a bundle from gambling, and to prove this he flashed a large wad of bills allegedly amounting to a few thousand dollars. For just a moment Geiger left the bar area, and when she returned, Jim handed her a screwdriver he'd just ordered and told her to keep stirring it with her straw. She recalled sipping her drink, but then things got very hazy. In fact, she had just been drugged and some subsequent details were completely erased from her memory after she fell into a drug-induced stupor. She did recall getting into Jim's car, a light-colored, older Thunderbird with a soiled interior. She remembered spelling out the letters of the word "Thunderbird" written into the dashboard in front of her, then she passed out. For brief periods throughout the morning, she regained consciousness and recalled being in a room with Jim sexually molesting her, but physically unable to resist his advances. She thought that Jim used a piece of green garden hose to beat her (Geiger, 1978; Fallon, 1980; Calo, 1980; 1981).

It was not until early afternoon on October 12, 1979, that Susan Geiger regained full consciousness. She found herself on the floor of Room 28 of the Airport Motel in South Hackensack, New Jersey. She had experienced a brutal sexual attack, and was bleeding from her face, mouth, breasts, vagina, and rectum. She located her clothes and managed to dress. In disbelief about what happened to her, she realized that her gold earrings were missing because they had been ripped from her ears, cutting them. She was also missing her handbag and its contents. Susan gathered what she could of herself and staggered out of the room and into the afternoon daylight (Geiger, 1978; Fallon, 1980; Calo, 1980; 1981).

Captain John Agar of the South Hackensack Police Department was surprised, as he pulled into the Airport Motel parking lot, at the sight of a young white female wandering frantically in the motel court. He pulled up and asked her to identify herself. Even though she was intermittently confused and in obvious pain, she said her name was Susan Geiger and began her story about being beaten and raped. Agar noticed that her clothing was disheveled and her blouse was torn and he tried to follow as she interrupted her story by periods of incoherence, almost as if she had become a mindless object during the night—in fact, one of the ultimate goals of any sadistic serial killer. Her face had scratches and was swollen, and she was bleeding from lips that had become so swollen from beating they looked like the false lips children paste on their faces at Halloween. After examining her hands, he observed

that some of her artificial fingernails were missing. The experienced captain concluded that Geiger was also still under the lingering influence of some kind of drug (Geiger, 1978; Fallon, 1980; Calo, 1980; 1981).

Captain Agar opened up Room 28 and immediately found an unmade bed and several broken artificial fingernails that matched Geiger's. There were also articles of feminine clothing on the bed belonging to Geiger as well as two motel towels. These articles were subsequently submitted for examination to the New Jersey State Police Laboratory in Little Falls. There, forensic chemists discovered seminal stains on the towels that had come from a male secretor who had type O blood. In male secretors, if the samples are suitable for typing, a blood type can be determined by the physical secretions of the body, such as saliva, perspiration, and seminal fluid (Fallon, 1980; Calo, 1980; 1981).

Agar drove Susan Geiger over to Hackensack Hospital, where an analysis of her blood confirmed the police captain's suspicions that the young woman had been drugged, by specifically, amobarbital and secobarbital, the same drugs found in the blood of Karen Schilt. Like Schilt, Geiger was pregnant. Emergency room personnel concluded that a severe beating caused the general swelling of her face; bruises on her forehead; and lacerations over her right eye, oral mucosa, and lips, thorax, and abdomen. She also had bruises on her left thigh and buttocks, and abrasions and ecchymoses on her right thigh. On her breasts were multiple contusions and abrasions. Her right breast had been "savagely" bitten. Like Karen Schilt's investigation, Geiger's follow-up would be inactivated until Richard Cottingham's arrest in 1980 (Geiger, 1978; Fallon, 1980; Calo, 1980; 1981).

Deedah Goodzari and Jane Doe: The Mystery of the Headless Torsos

Hotel employees at the Travel Inn Motor Lodge at 515 West 42nd Street in New York remembered that the resident in Room 417 was secretive. He registered under the name Carl Wilson of Anderson Place in Merlin, New Jersey; both the name and location, detectives would later discover, were bogus. The man checked in November 29th, hung his "Do Not Disturb" sign from the doorknob, and was rarely seen thereafter (Keppel & Birnes, 1997; Geberth, 2006).

On a Sunday, December 2, 1979, at about 9:00 A.M., hotel workers called the Fire Department because smoke was streaming out of Room 417. Quickly, the New York firefighters from the local engine company extinguished the fire. In the smoke-filled darkness of the room, they found a frightening discovery: the charred corpses of two women lying on separate beds, covered by bed sheets that had been deliberately set on fire. Their bodies were nude and mutilated; their heads and hands, completely severed from their bodies,

were not in the room (see Figure 4.1). Detectives believed the killer had gone to great lengths to remove evidence. In processing the double-body recovery site, detectives realized that the killer left neither fingerprints nor implements of his murders. Setting a fire as the last act in a murder indicated that he did not want to leave any physical evidence that could be traced back to him. One detective commented to *New York Times* reporters that he had never seen a room cleaned out so thoroughly, considering the amount of mutilation that took place (Keppel & Birnes, 1997; Geberth, 2006).

At autopsy it was revealed that each woman had undergone extreme physical torture and sexual abuse while still alive. Later, the investigation would determine that both women were abducted and killed at different times. Initially, they were unidentified—not the best way to begin a homicide investigation. Police later identified Deedah Goodzari, a 23-year-old prostitute, as one of the unlucky victims. The other young woman is unidentified to this day, but authorities guessed that she was in her late teens (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Forty-second Street, stretching from the Chrysler and the *Daily News* buildings in the east, under the Park Avenue overpass, straight across Bryant Park and Times Square, and past the Port Authority bus terminal on its way under the remains of the West Side Highway to the abandoned dock yards along the Hudson River, looks sometimes like a raw scar through Manhattan's midsection (Keppel & Birnes, 1997; Geberth, 2006).

Figure 4.1 Headless torso of one victim with knife scratches on her back and buttocks. (Photograph courtesy of the Bergen County, New Jersey, Prosecutor's Office.)

From Sixth Avenue west, you'll find micro-skirted hookers looking for tricks, crack dealers in doorways hawking nickel vials, strip joints, pornographic movie houses, massage parlors, seamy low-rent hotels, and some of the toughest bars on the East Coast. If it's for sale, you'll find it here on West 42nd Street. Citizens' committees complain, there's a new reform mayor, a congressional delegation sweeps through inspecting urban decay, or there's a brutal murder that shocks even the thickest-skinned New Yorker. These are some of the reasons the NYPD will periodically crack down on the illicit activities along 42nd Street. But a couple of months pass, a black-gray Northeast winter comes rolling across the harbor, and the street again turns into a virtual haven for the illicit. Areas like this are perfect trolling grounds for the sexually sadistic serial killer because he blends in so well and remains virtually anonymous, without his potential victims' suspecting imminent danger from the man whispering to them from the shadow of a doorway (Keppel & Birnes, 1997; Geberth, 2006).

A headless, handless torso would strike terror in anyone, and in this type of homicide the murderer knows the difficulty police will have in pursuing leads related to the killer's identity. Based on the mutilated remains they discovered in the 42nd St. Travel Inn Motor Lodge, Manhattan South's elite homicide squad had two operating theories, as reported in the *New York Times*: One was that the murderer was in a psychotic rage and the other that he feared the identification of the victims would incriminate him. And, because there were two victims, police did not eliminate the possibility that they were looking for more than one killer (Keppel & Birnes, 1997; Geberth, 2006).

Investigators desperately approached the murder inquiry from two perspectives. First, detectives conducted a massive search of miles of abandoned piers and mounds of garbage piles for the heads and hands. They employed underwater divers and dredges out in the Hudson and along the river pilings near the hotel. Because police believed that the victims were prostitutes, they checked scores of street walkers and searched hundreds of missing person reports for young women who matched the victims' descriptions (Keppel & Birnes, 1997; Geberth, 2006).

Second, they had a description of the probable killer from hotel employees, who said he was a white man, 35 years old, 5 feet 10 inches, weighing 175 pounds, and with brown hair. The detectives showed a composite sketch of the man to street walkers and interviewed any john matching the description. They also questioned prostitutes who had been approached by a customer who wanted an assignation at the Travel Inn Motor Lodge. Common in cases where there was a physical description of the potential killer, detectives found many persons who matched the composite and hung out on 42nd Street. Police interviewed hundreds of potential suspects but would not find the right one for almost a year and a half. However, 4 months after the

Midtown Torso cases, the nude body of a 19-year-old female was found in Bergen County, New Jersey. That prostitute had been sexually assaulted and mutilated, but her head and hands were not removed. Because of differences in modus operandi (M.O.) with regard to geography and location, the cases were not immediately connected by police in New York and New Jersey, and the identity of the headless-torso murderer was still unknown (Keppel & Birnes, 1997; Geberth, 2006).

Murder of Valerie Ann Street

The morning of May 5, 1980 began routinely for Maryann Sancanelli, a housekeeper at the Quality Inn in Hasbrouck Heights, New Jersey. She was in the midst of cleaning Room 132 and noticed that the bed on the south side of the room had not been slept in, but its bedspread was pulled partially down at the foot as if to cover something. The other bed had been slept in. As she tried to vacuum underneath the made-up bed, her vacuum jarred up against something under the bed. When she picked up the cover, her eyes widened in shock as she gasped at the sight. She had discovered the fresh body of Valerie Ann Street, murdered, probably, just the night before. Mrs. Sancanelli phoned the police (Calo, 1980; Fallon, 1980).

Valerie Street was pretty, 19 years old, 5 feet 4 inches tall, weighed 135 pounds, had blue eyes, and shoulder-length artificially colored strawberry blond hair. Investigators observed that she must have died an excruciatingly painful death, a sure sign of the control signature of a power–anger killer. Her hands were handcuffed behind her back, and embedded into the flesh of her wrists were deep marks from the cuffs. Right away detectives noticed that across her neck were two deep ligature marks. At the scene, investigators concluded that she had been gagged because there was residue from pieces of white adhesive tape across her mouth. The examination at the scene revealed that her breasts had markings similar to those of other victims in the previous series of unsolved rapes; they were contused with her nipples severely scratched and bitten. Also, the victim had suffered blows to the shins of both legs. When she was discovered in the Quality Inn, all her clothing and all forms of identification were missing. Investigation revealed that Street had entered through the rear southwest entrance. One bit of promising evidence discovered was a latent print found on the ratchet side of the handcuffs. Police hoped it belonged to the killer (Calo, 1980; Fallon, 1980).

Dr. Louis V. Napolitano (May 6, 1980) of the Bergen County Medical Examiner's Office performed the autopsy on Valerie Ann Street, in the report of which he described her injuries as bizarre and startling. Initially, because she had a large black and blue ecchymosis in the right temporal head and cheek area, he found that she had sustained a blunt impact blow or blows that resulted in injuries to the back of her head and in contusions to her brain. Within 24

hours of her death, Street received multiple bruises on her arms and shoulders. The most graphic destruction to Street's body was the abrasions and lacerations to her breasts and nipples. Dr. Napolitano concluded she had been savagely bitten on her breasts. Valerie Street had been strangled with a thin strap or chord that had been pulled upward from the right side of her neck. Street's cause of death was listed as mechanical asphyxia due to strangulation.

For more than a month, Valerie Ann Street's body lay unidentified in the county morgue because the killer had removed all her clothing and any identification she would have been carrying. The only objects foreign to the room where the housekeeper had found her were the handcuffs and a broken piece of an earring the victim was known to wear. The killer had picked the room clean of evidence. Neither the other half of the broken earring nor its mate could be found. So, absent clues to the killer's identity, the police investigators quickly turned to establishing the young woman's identity (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

The victim had registered at the motel as Shelley Dudley from Florida. She entered the lobby without baggage and requested a room sometime between 4 and 4:30 on the afternoon of May 4th. While waiting for the desk clerk, who was occupied with his guest register, Shelley walked to her right in the general direction of the southwest entrance and came right back from that same direction to register at the desk. The clerk did not hear from her again until she called at about 10 o'clock in the morning to keep the room for one more day. She never checked out (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Shelley Dudley was officially identified as Valerie Ann Street through fingerprints on file with the state of Florida for an arrest and conviction for prostitution. Investigations further revealed that Street had left Florida on April 30, 1980. She arrived in New York and was seen by another prostitute named China on May 3 at 10 P.M. at the corner of 32nd Street and Madison Avenue in New York City.

A fellow prostitute also saw Valerie 3 hours later, about 1 A.M. on May 4, soliciting at that same corner at 32nd and Madison Avenue in New York City, only eight blocks from where Leslie O'Dell, Cottingham's final victim, would be picked up 3 weeks later on May 22. Cottingham's arrest and the solution to the Valerie Ann Street murder would wait until then (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Murders at the Hotel Seville

It was a case of déjà vu for Manhattan South detectives on May 15, 1980, when they were again summoned by firefighters to a hotel room fire, this time in the Hotel Seville at 22 East 29th Street just off Fifth Avenue. Inside the smoke-filled room, fire department personnel found the remains of Jean Reyner, nude and mutilated. However, this time the killer did not remove the

Figure 4.2 Incised breasts found on the headboard of the bed. (Photograph courtesy of the New York Police Department.)

victim's head and hands, having incised, instead, and dissected out both of her breasts. In open display, he neatly placed them side-by-side on the headboard of the bed (see Figure 4.2). There was also evidence, again, of bondage and torture, and homicide detectives immediately linked this murder to the Midtown Torso cases. This victim, like Deedah Goodzari, was a high-class prostitute who ordinarily wouldn't have been operating from this type of lower class, seamy hotel. It was a mystery, just like the Goodzari murder, but in only 1 week the case would be broken when detectives solved the case of Leslie Ann O'Dell, who was brutally attacked and barely escaped death (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Attempted Murder of Leslie Ann O'Dell

On May 22nd, 1980, 5 foot 4 and blonde Leslie Ann O'Dell, a prostitute working the New York's eastside, met a customer on 25th Street between Madison and Park Avenues just north of Grammercy Park. The customer, who called himself Tommy, drove O'Dell to a bar, where they spent a couple of hours drinking and talking before he told her that he was taking her over to Jersey where they would spend the evening having sex. They stopped to eat at the New Star Diner in South Hackensack, New Jersey, only 5/10 of a mile from the Ledgewood Terrace Apartments and 4/10 of a mile from the Airport Motel. From there, the man drove O'Dell to the Quality Inn Motel

in Hasbrouck Heights, a mile down the road from the diner (Calo, 1980; Fallon, 1980).

O'Dell's date parked the car in the rear of the motel outside the southwest entrance. As though the chain of events were important to him, Tommy told O'Dell to wait there while he went back into the front entrance and until he came to the southwest entrance to get her. After a short time had expired, Tommy came out of the southwest entrance, opened his car trunk, and took out their things. As before, the man, with O'Dell at his side, entered the Quality Inn through the rear southwest entrance. He cautioned her not to be seen by anyone. After they got to Room 117, Tommy left to move his car (Calo, 1980; Fallon, 1980).

When Tommy returned to the room, Leslie Ann O'Dell's torment began. First, he ordered her to undress and get into bed face down. At that point, Tommy laid on top of her and placed a knife at her throat, threatening to kill her if she uttered a sound. Without waiting for her to say anything, he handcuffed her wrists behind her back, and then, as if he were arousing himself sexually, told her explicitly what he was going to do to her. He told her he derived sexual satisfaction and enjoyment from torturing and beating women, and that he had done it many times before. She was a whore, he said, she had to pay for being a whore, and he was going to hurt her because she was a whore. As part of her torture, Tommy scraped her right pre-sacral region with his knife and threatened to burn her breasts as well as her pubic and anal areas while he threatened to beat her with his belt. He then turned O'Dell over, raped her, bit her breasts like a savage, stabbed and scraped one breast with his knife, and lacerated her sternum. Acting as though that weren't enough satisfaction, he forced her to perform fellatio upon him, all the time threatening her with further pain, humiliation, and more torture. It was clear that the verbal terrorizing of O'Dell was just as important to the man as the physical torture was. His sexual arousal relied on that. He repeatedly told her that he was going to hurt her if she refused any of his sexual commands or called out for any help or in pain (Calo, 1980; Fallon, 1980).

As if to reinforce the level of his domination over her, he shackled O'Dell's ankles with another pair of handcuffs so she could not run away and removed the first pair from her wrists. He ordered her to lick his entire body, which she did, and then he performed forcible anal sodomy upon her. Even more out of control now than he had been and calling himself her "master," Tommy ordered her to kiss and lick his feet. Instinctively, O'Dell resisted, the man called Tommy grabbed her and she screamed in terror. In a fit of absolute rage, Tommy threw O'Dell on the bed and began strangling and suffocating her. She believed she was about to die. Then, as his hands grew tighter around her throat, choking off her cries, he told her to shut up because if anyone came to the room she was dead. But motel security officers heard O'Dell's screams and called police (Calo, 1980; Fallon, 1980).

Motel personnel, responding to O'Dell's screams, burst into the room, interrupting Richard Cottingham's assault, and he fled the room to escape. However, the police had already responded and before he could leave the motel he was caught and arrested by the Hasbrouck Heights Police. Found in his possession during the initial search were an open roll of adhesive tape, handcuffs, leather slave collars, a leather mouth gag, a fake gun, a knife, liquor, and the Tuinal capsules, which would eventually tie him to his previous rapes (Calo, 1980; Fallon, 1980).

Evidence against Cottingham

The abduction and sexual assault of Leslie Ann O'Dell was Richard Cottingham's undoing, and shortly after his arrest he sat across from Sgt. Bruce Werner and Investigator Edward Denning in an interview in the Hasbrouck Heights Police Department Detective Bureau (1980, May 28). The two detectives found themselves facing a bespectacled and mustachioed man, 5 feet 10 inches tall, 187 pounds, born November 25th, 1946, the day after another infamous killer, Theodore Robert Bundy, was born. They began by advising him of his constitutional rights, being careful to do this properly because no one wanted a case of this level of brutality and magnitude to slip away on the basis of a successful arrest procedures appeal. In the cases of most serial killers, the rights admonishment is but a formality because they are quite familiar with all aspects of it; Cottingham was no exception.

Investigator Denning told Cottingham that he had the right to remain silent and asked if he understood that right. Cottingham acknowledged that he understood and was asked if he knew what that right was. Cottingham responded in a typically confident fashion; he said, "Yes, I don't have to say anything."

Denning stated the second right that anything he said could be used against him in court. He asked, "Do you understand that right." He said, "yes," and Denning asked him what that right meant to him. Cottingham explained, "Anything we discussed could subsequently be used against me in court." Denning told Cottingham he had the right to talk to a lawyer before any questions were asked of him and he could have a lawyer present during any questioning. Denning asked if he understood that right, and he replied, "yes". When asked what that right meant to him, he said, "If I wanted to, I could have a lawyer present while being questioned."

Not surprisingly, Cottingham asked, as though he was anticipating the next right, "What happens when a person cannot afford to hire a lawyer?" Denning told him, "If you cannot afford a lawyer, one would be appointed for you if you so desired before questioning." Denning then asked, "What does that right mean to you?" He said that a public defender could be appointed for him if he needed one. Denning went on to explain that Cottingham had the right to stop answering questions at any time and asked him if he

understood that right. He said, "yes," and Denning asked what that meant to him. Cottingham said, "If I wanted to stop answering questions, I could." Again repeating cautiously, Denning asked him if he understood all the rights he had just explained to him, and he said "yes."

Denning then asked the big question, "Are you willing to speak to us and answer questions?" He said that he would and didn't need a lawyer at this time because he had "nothing to hide." Cottingham had already prepared himself for the inevitable, that he would get caught and needed an alibi. He said the girl was in the motel room with him voluntarily, and "I agreed to pay her $180 to go there with me to do anything that I wanted her to do."

The investigators began with a reasonably safe question. They asked Cottingham to explain what he was doing between Wednesday, May 21, 1980, until his arrest on Thursday, May 22. He said on May 21 he appeared at the Bergen County Courthouse in the morning for a divorce hearing. When investigators interview a serial killer, it is important to look for obvious stressors in that person's life. In Cottingham's case, the thought of the divorce proceeding may have been what pushed him over the edge to engage a prostitute and seek to punish her for selling sex. That day it was Leslie Ann O'Dell's turn.

Cottingham went on to say that the hearing was postponed, and that he left the courthouse at 1:00 P.M. That information would be the only data that police investigators could corroborate. The next portion of his statement was whatever Cottingham wanted to say, as is the case with most serial killers when they talk. There will be a portion of their statement that appears in the abstract—one steadfast rule in their lives—nothing the police will be able to corroborate. Cottingham would not say what theater he went to or remember exactly what restaurant he ate at, because he knew investigators could check his story out and use any inaccuracies to challenge not only his alibi but the entire aura of credibility and bravado he believed he was exuding. Of course, he wouldn't want that.

From the courthouse, Cottingham told police, he drove to New York City and went to a movie theater "somewhere" in the Times Square area to see *Friday the 13th*. After the movie, he went to a restaurant and had dinner and a couple of drinks. He went to work from 3:00 P.M. to 11:00 P.M. Investigators asked Cottingham for the names of the restaurant and movie theater, but he said he could not recall. He said after dinner he went to another bar. He threw out the name "Blarney Stone," the name of a bar in the Times Square area and also another bar just a block away from Penn Station. When the cops asked him for the location of the bar he went to, he said he did not remember, "They are all over the city."

His statement jumps to 2:30 A.M. on the morning of May 22. Cottingham said he stopped his New Jersey–registered Chevrolet Caprice somewhere along 25th Street between Lexington Avenue and Park Avenue South. He specifically avoiding mentioning to police what happened between 11:00 P.M.

and 2:30 A.M., but said he was driving in the area. He referred to his contact with Leslie Ann O'Dell as "the girl who was with him in the motel," not by name. She approached him and engaged him in a conversation to solicit for sex. She agreed to accompany him to a motel in New Jersey, and Cottingham emphasized that she agreed to "perform whatever sexual acts I desired for $180." At this point, Cottingham kept true to form for most serial killers, that is, he was cooperative—in his mind—and more than willing to deny any wrongdoing on his part. It's not unusual for a killer such as Cottingham to rationalize the incident by blaming the victim. She agreed to have sex with him, he told police, and wanted it.

At about 3:30 A.M., they stopped at a diner on Route 46, which, he said, was in Little Ferry on the right-hand side of the road. When asked about what he ate, he said, "cheeseburger and fries," never mentioning what she had. He claimed that at about 4:30 A.M. he signed into the Quality Inn Motel on Route 17 in Hasbrouck Heights using the name "Caruthers." After he was registered, he let the "female subject" in via a side door. Most serial killers, especially those such as Ted Bundy, frequently depersonalize their victims by referring to them as objects, things, or "female subjects." Cottingham was asked why he had signed in under an assumed name. He said it was just a name that he made up and never answered the detective's question. At this point in the interview, Investigator Denning made note that "when questioned about details as to location and places that he frequents, and so on, he was evasive and consistently said I cannot recall or I don't remember."

The next segment of the interview focused on the activities that took place in Room 117. The detectives were now on delicate ground. Talking about the actual sex acts may cause most killers to clam up because they'll be worried about their reputations. One thing for sure, if he does talk, his arrogance will take over. One thing learned from Ted Bundy is that the killer will look to reward the investigators for knowing what's going on, understanding the dynamics of the situation. So investigators must display this in some way. And that's exactly what happened in the Cottingham interview when the detectives confronted him with his use of handcuffs and other implements, which he knew they knew about.

He said, "The girl disrobed and gave me a blow job." Then he sodomized her and had normal intercourse, inserting his feelings that the girl was responsible for what happened. He said, with much bravado, "At no time during this period did she object to any of these sexual acts." When detectives questioned him further regarding the handcuffs found on the victim's ankles and articles found in his possession at arrest, he said, "I just started playing the game. I used them as a means of sexual gratification."

He defended his actions by saying that, initially, the handcuffs were placed on the girl's wrists after she performed fellatio on him. Then, he sodomized her, after which he took another pair of handcuffs and cuffed her ankles. He

then removed the handcuffs from her wrists. The curious detectives asked him why he did this. He claimed, "It was to keep her from running away if she became panicky."

"Why did you have a knife and display it to the girl?" the detectives asked him.

Almost believing he had a right to play his game, he said, "I pointed the knife towards her and told her not to make any noise."

The detectives next inquired about why he had the articles in his possession. Most sexually sadistic serial killers need implements they have had confidence in and that worked best for them in the past, so many of them carry their sexual assault and murder kits. But in Cottingham's case, he had no choice, since he had an extreme fascination with bondage. He proudly said it "fascinated" him. "The handcuffs and other paraphernalia were just something I kept on hand."

In another "game" he played with this sexual partner, Cottingham admitted to police, he took a toy gun out of his bag and put it in a position near the girl. He then would walk away so that she would have ample opportunity to grab the gun. He claimed the girl did in fact pick up the gun, aim it at him, and pull the trigger. After she realized that it was a toy gun, she became hysterical, and started screaming. He was asked why he did that. He responded, "It was just one of the games that I liked to play, and I wanted to see how it feels to have someone under control."

At this point in the interview, detectives established Cottingham's familiarity with the body recovery sites and victim contact areas. Cottingham said he lived at 29 Vreeland Street, in Lodi, New Jersey for 5 or 6 years, and wouldn't be specific as to when he had moved there. Because he knew that detectives would eventually find out, Cottingham said he formerly resided in the Ledgewood Terrace Apartments, Building 470, Little Ferry, New Jersey. When asked if he had any friends still residing there, he said no, but his wife may still be friends with some of the women who currently live there.

Serial killers know their victims' neighborhoods better than the police, better even than people who've lived there their entire lives. Consequently, serial killers know each and every victim pick-up site in the same way an animal knows how to find a watering hole or a favorite patch of pasture. Detectives asked about the bars he frequented in New York City, also obvious pick-up sites for hookers, but Cottingham said he didn't go to any place in particular. Investigator Denning asked Cottingham if he had ever been to Flanagan's. Not only did he say he had, but gave its specific location of First Avenue and 67th Street.

Because investigators had not collected evidence that would have connected Cottingham to each victim who had been previously assaulted or murdered, he totally denied any knowledge of them. He was shown a photograph of Susan Geiger, and he said he didn't know who she was. Denning explained

to Cottingham that Geiger was abducted, raped, and held against her will at the Airport Hotel in South Hackensack in October 1978. Cottingham repeated that he did not know her and claimed he couldn't remember ever having been to the Airport Hotel. Denning strongly accused Cottingham of this crime. He repeatedly denied any knowledge and insisted that he had never been to the Airport Hotel.

Cottingham was shown a photograph of Michael and Mary Ann Carr. He said he didn't know either person. Denning asked if he had ever rented or stayed in a room at the Quality Inn prior to this day. He said no. Cottingham was asked about the Stage Coach Inn, Jade East Motel, and the Congress Inn, and he said no. Unfortunately, it would be at a later time in the investigation that investigators would find Cottingham's handwriting on motel registration cards under assumed names, so they couldn't confront him about that at the time of this interview.

Realizing they were not getting anywhere with this line of questioning, the detectives then asked Cottingham how often he would solicit the services of a prostitute. He said once or twice a week. To preserve his reputation and legitimize his frequenting of prostitutes, he said he had friends who were prostitutes, but he declined to name them. Cottingham even claimed to have saved a prostitute's life, as though he was acting his role as protector with the attitude of a hero.

Next, Cottingham was questioned about his previous arrests. He only recalled being arrested for shoplifting in Paramus, New Jersey, because he knew that the investigators were aware of this arrest. He was asked about other crimes. He said if he had knowledge of any other crimes of this nature, he would be crazy to tell them. He also said, "I know you are doing your job, but I know what you are trying to do. You are trying to trick me and you're being nice to me because you want me to admit to things that I didn't do. Aren't you guys going to beat me like they do in New York?" At this point, Cottingham was in the driver's seat in the interview. Detectives were limited because they didn't know what evidence would hold up against the suspect, and he knew they didn't know anything, otherwise they would have confronted him with it right then and there just as they had with the names of other hotels in the area.

Serial killers consistently deny any involvement unless the cards are stacked against them. So far, Cottingham knew the detectives had no evidence of other crimes and were on a fishing expedition. Cottingham was true to the serial killer prototype. He was cooperative, initially, and denied any involvement in other crimes. After all, he considered himself a clever perpetrator and wanted investigators to appreciate his greatness. He was trying to deal with an image he was projecting which was, in his perception, greater than him. Cottingham went back to his jail cell not having to admit to any murders or assaults.

Evidence against Cottingham began to build in early June. Investigator Ronald Deramo learned from Mr. Van Atta, of the FBI's latent fingerprint section, that the latent print taken from the handcuffs seized into evidence from the room where Valerie Ann Street was found matched the left thumb impression of Richard Cottingham.

On June 9, 1980, investigators took Barbara Lucas, Cottingham's girlfriend during this time, to the Quality Inn, which she recognized as a place she had been to with Cottingham on two occasions during which he had checked in, parked the car in back, and entered through the southwest corner door just as the suspect had done with other victims who had lived through his assaults. On May 30, Lucas gave detectives information that she had also been to Flanagan's Tavern numerous times with Richard. The vehicle he drove was a maroon T-bird.

Police interviewed Cottingham's coworker at Empire State Blue Cross Blue Shield, located at 622 Third Avenue in New York City. Bruce Huff (Grieco & Werner, 1980, June 4) related that it was frequently Cottingham's style to approach prostitutes, flash large amounts of money, and promise to pay them after their activity with him. His favorite places were the corner of Fifth Avenue and 32nd Street near the Empire State Building. Cottingham spoke of how good it felt to be able to beat the prostitutes at their own game—taking money—and he revealed to Bruce that at meeting a strange girl he would drop "black beauties," a depressant drug, into the girl's drink if she appeared not to be consuming enough alcohol. Several coworkers observed Cottingham leave work between 8:00 P.M. and 8:30 P.M. and never return.

Like most psychopathic serial killers for whom crossing other people's boundaries provides a consistent thrill, Richard was a petty thief in the workplace, stealing keys that opened coworkers' desks and file cabinets. One time a coworker noticed his meal tickets missing from his center desk drawer, along with a calculator. On May 29, 1980, a search warrant was executed at the Cottingham house in Lodi, New Jersey. Mrs. Janet Cottingham stated that she had been curious about what was in the trunk of his T-bird when it was inoperable in the garage sometime around December 1979. She found a black bag containing handcuffs and a bottle of VO liquor, a wig, and a little black strap tapered at both ends, looking very much like an arm restraint.

In the search of Cottingham's house, detectives found several keys. One was to an apartment of a coworker in Flushing, New York. That coworker had a Honeywell Pentax 35 MM camera stolen from him more than 6 to 7 years ago. It was found in the search of Cottingham's belongings, and the coworker identified the camera and its serial number (Calo, 1980; Fallon, 1980).

The search yielded a virtual treasure trove of evidence linking the suspect to many crimes. Found in Cottingham's possessions was a miniature tan toy Koala, just like the one Valerie Ann Street usually carried with her. It was positively identified by her sister. In addition, a pair of earrings found

in Cottingham's "chamber of horrors" were identified as belonging to Street. The treasure hunt wasn't finished. A crucial piece of evidence was found. The search of Cottingham's residence located the key to Mary Ann Carr's apartment; this was almost like finding Cinderella's slipper for police detectives. Also discovered were butterfly earrings belonging to Deedrah Goodzari and a heart-shaped pendant belonging to Jean Reyner (Calo, 1980; Fallon, 1980).

Dr. Napolitano provided another piece of circumstantial evidence in the case. He was shown a mouth gag—Item No. 15 from evidence found in Cottingham's residence—and asked if it could have caused the bruises on the neck of Valerie Ann Street. He said the gag could have caused those marks.

At Barbara Lucas's apartment, police investigators recovered a Nikon Camera, a black case, and two Nikon lenses. Paul Chinn, a coworker of Cottingham's, positively identified them as stolen from him some time between Friday, September 2 and Sunday, September 4, 1977 (Calo, 1980; Fallon, 1980).

Investigator Denning closed the circumstantial web around Cottingham tighter. On May 22, 1980, Denning discovered that Richard Cottingham filled out a registration card and signed into the Quality Inn Motel using the name "Jack Caruthers." He compared that card with the card filled out by the person who registered in Room 28 of the Airport Motel on October 11, 1978, the date of the rape and abduction of Susan Geiger. The name on that card was "John Anderson." The printing and handwriting on the two cards were remarkably similar. Both cards listed Ford automobiles, and the first two letters of the license number as "VX."

Denning reviewed additional motel registration cards that were retained in the Maryann Carr murder case, which included cards from the Quality Inn Motel, the Stagecoach Motel, the Airport Motel, the Jade East Motel, and the Congress Inn. He found a card from the Stagecoach Motel, dated December 15, 1977, and filled out in the name of "J. Boyle." This card was compared to the other two cards, and it was found to have similar handwriting. In particular, the number "4" printed in the space for "license plate number" on the Stagecoach Motel card was virtually identical to the number "4" printed in the space for "street" on the Airport Motel card (Calo, 1980; Fallon, 1980).

In the investigation of the fire at the Travel Inn Motor Lodge in New York City on December 2, 1979, where the bodies of Deedah Goodzari and the Jane Doe were found, a motel clerk turned over the registration cards to NYPD detectives for Room 417. The card listed the arrival date as November 29, 1979, and the departure date as December 2, 1979. The card was filled out in the name of "Mr. Carl Wilson" of Anderson Road, Merlin, New Jersey. Denning compared this card to the cards from the Quality Inn Motel, Airport Motel, and Stagecoach Motel, and the handwriting was similar. The letters "M R" printed on the Travel Inn card in the space for "Name" bore an

absolute similarity to the letters "M R" printed in the space for "Name" on the Quality Inn registration. The writing for the abbreviation of New Jersey, "NJ" on all four cards, was very similar. All of the handwriting suspicions of Denning were later confirmed by a handwriting expert (Calo, 1980; Fallon, 1980).

On August 30, 1980, the Bergen County Grand Jury returned a 21-count indictment against Cottingham (Breslin, 1980). He was ultimately convicted of the murders and assaults in New Jersey and New York.

Similarity of Cases as Argued by the Prosecutor

Prior to any known M.O. and signature analysis testimony in any U.S. court, the Letter in Lieu of Brief and Appendix on Behalf of the State of New Jersey, the case was summarized by a Bergen County Assistant Prosecutor. He argued that the

> identity is an issue as to which evidence of a separate criminal offense of a defendant may be admitted, if relevant, at a defendant's trial for a different criminal offense. However:
>
> [i]n order for evidence of [another] crime to be admissible on the issue of identity … the … criminal activity with which defendant is identified must be so nearly identical in method as to earmark the crime as defendant's handiwork. The conduct in question must be unusual and distinctive so as to be like a signature … and there must be sufficient facts in both crimes to establish an unusual pattern ….
>
> But the unique nature of a defendant's conduct may be proven by the common occurrence of only *one* element in otherwise only superficially similar crimes if this one element is in and of itself unique and distinctive.
>
> In explaining the basis for this assertion, the assistant prosecutor quoted from the facts of *State v. Sempsey, supra*. They illustrate the concurrence of circumstance that is required between relatively frequently committed crimes that are necessary to satisfy the elements of Evidence Rule 55. In that case of sexual assault, the introduction of evidence of a prior assault … on the question of identity, was upheld because the court noted the following similarities:
>
> Both attacks occurred late at night. Defendant knew the victims in both instances from having worked in their apartments and thus knew there were no men residing with them. In both instances the eyes of victims were taped to conceal the attacker's identity; he wore peculiar head gear, a dark jacket and pants. In both instances the attacker possessed a gun and upon leaving instructed the victims to count or he would shoot. The victims were threatened with death if they screamed. He smelled of grease, was unable to obtain an erection, and resorted to fellatio ….

The assistant prosecutor said what is striking about these circumstances, when compared with those of the cases presently before the court, is their generality; none of them makes the crimes rare or bizarre.

However, the crimes that we are considering are certainly unusual, rare, and bizarre. This is a major narrowing characteristic …. This bizarreness is exhibited in the common techniques of abduction or transportation and forcible confinement of a victim, in the commission of the crimes within the same limited area, and in the similarities of the victims as perceived by Richard Cottingham, in his common motive and justification for the crimes, and in the rituals and violence of the sexual assaults. To the uniquely aberrational mind of Richard Cottingham, the victims, so similar in appearance, even to their blond hair, were all "whores" whom he must punish, and in this punishment receive his sexual gratification. This is what he told Leslie Ann O'Dell as he tortured her. Cottingham linked all the assaults in a common scheme when he stated to Miss O'Dell that he was going to torture and beat her, that he had done what he was doing to her many times before, and that he received sexual gratification, not normally, but in domination, in inflicting pain on women. Thus, Maryann Carr, although not raped or sodomized, not bitten nor burnt upon her breasts (but certainly assaulted on her right breast) was actually sexually assaulted; for she was sadistically beaten, shackled with handcuffs, and was the victim of ultimate domination, the ultimate exercise of power—murder. Sexual assault is the only persuasive motive for Maryann Carr's kidnapping and murder, for the only other merely possible motive, robbery, could have been easily accomplished at her apartment and, in any case, some of the items taken, such as her coat and shoes are not the usual objects of forcible theft.

The assistant prosecutor continued by saying that murder as the ultimate domination seems a probable object in each of the other assaults. Certainly, Cottingham's possession of adhesive tape, open and ready for use, his possession of a knife, his renting of a room for 2 days, and his threats to kill in the O'Dell case indicate the same object that was accomplished in the Street and Carr cases. The savage beatings given to Schilt and Geiger and their drugging and abandonment while in a comatose state, strongly suggest that they were left for dead, as was conceded by the trial judge.

A comparison of the circumstances surrounding these bizarre crimes and the techniques employed to commit them, emphasizes their intrinsic common bizarreness and reveals a common M.O., a rare, distinctive, novel technique in their commission. The assistant prosecutor chose to distinguish similar characteristics in the Schilt and Carr cases, the Geiger and Carr cases, and the Street and Carr cases, as three separate comparisons, an interesting way to link cases together.

In comparing the Karen Schilt case with the Maryann Carr case, the assistant prosecutor found at least nine significant points of similarity:

1. Each victim was of the same general physical description with artificially treated blond hair.
2. Each was approached while alone, in an area familiar to and frequented by the defendant.
3. A part of each crime, the abduction of Maryann Carr and the dumping of Karen Schilt, was committed at the same place, Ledgewood Terrace.
4. The discarding of each victim was at a place familiar to Richard Cottingham, and both were in the same general limited area of Bergen County.
5. The body of each victim was secreted between a parked car and a fence.
6. Each crime was committed with the use of a car. Karen Schilt certainly was abducted by Cottingham with a car. The setting of the Quality Inn Motel and the circumstances of her abduction strongly suggest that a car was used in the murder of Maryann Carr.
7. Physical violence was inflicted on each victim. Maryann Carr was beaten and killed. Karen Schilt was burned and beaten and left comatose to die.
8. Each victim was robbed of personal possessions, including her coat and handbag.
9. Each victim was perceived by Richard Cottingham as loose or sexually promiscuous, as, simply, "whores" whom he must punish, Karen Schilt because she appeared to be a "working girl" alone in a bar and Maryann Carr because she appeared to be a nurse, and, therefore, sexually promiscuous…. (Calo, 1981)

The assistant prosecutor's points of similarity between the assaults on Geiger and Carr were:

1. Each victim was blond, of the same general description.
2. Each victim was approached while alone, in an area familiar to and frequented by the defendant.
3. Each victim was assaulted at motels only 1/9 of a mile apart.
4. A car was used to abduct each victim.
5. Each victim was beaten, particularly about the head. Carr was murdered and Geiger left comatose to die.
6. Each victim was robbed of personal possessions, including her handbag.
7. Each victim was perceived by Cottingham as a "whore" who must be punished. (Calo, 1981)

The assistant prosecutor found at least twelve significant points of similarity between the murders of Valerie Ann Street and Maryann Carr:

1. The victims were generally of the same age and physical description, both with artificially treated blond hair.
2. The victims were approached while alone in areas familiar to and frequented by the defendant.

3. The victims were women who were perceived by Richard Cottingham as "whores" who must be punished.
4. The crimes were committed at the same location, The Quality Inn in Hasbrouck Heights.
5. The assailant in each case exhibited a knowledge of the motel and, in each case, he committed a part of the crime at or near the southwest entrance of the motel.
6. In each case a car was used to transport the victim.
7. In each case white adhesive tape was affixed across the mouth of the victim and later removed, leaving a residue.
8. In each case handcuffs were used to shackle the victim.
9. In each case a sharp weapon was used as an instrument of assault and torture.
10. Each victim was strangled with a thin ligature pulled upward and from the rear of the neck, leaving an identical mark.
11. Each victim received a blow to the head with a blunt instrument that extended over her occipital bone, as well as a severe beating to her torso.
12. Each victim was robbed of clothing and other personal possessions. (Calo, 1981)

Killer's Signature

Taking into consideration the elements of Cottingham's M.O. and signature, as pointed out by the assistant prosecutor, a more modern-day analysis was completed in the book *Signature Killers* (1997), which included information about Cottingham's murders in New York as well as the murders and attempted murders in New Jersey, and explained in detail as follows.

The killer's method of operation from his first known victim, Street, through his last, O'Dell, remained constant in his approach to victims and functionally changed in the places he disposed of their bodies. Here, the key to understanding the concept of M.O. was that the killer modified and changed the disposal sites if the preferred one didn't work or was unavailable. Otherwise, he stayed with a particular method if it worked. Nearly all victims were taken to a motel or were killed in areas with which the killer was familiar. The changes in body disposal were dependent on the killer's need for detachment and location at the time of the murder. Dead victims in motels in New York City stayed in New York. Those victims who made it to New Jersey with him were found in New Jersey. The locations of the bodies of the victims were based on what was convenient for the killer.

This killer's M.O. was extensively refined and stylized as he went along. In practically each circumstance the killer did something to clean up the crime scene after him. He took jewelry, purses, and clothing from his victims. In New York, the motel fires could have even been interpreted as an effort to

cover up physical evidence of the crimes. He may have tried to prevent identification in the New York murders by removing the heads and hands of his victims at one scene, but he really didn't need to worry. After his two New York City mutilations, he didn't have to fear that the identification of the victims would lead police to him; none of his other crimes had put authorities on his trail. He believed he was completely invisible and could commit rapes and murders at will. In the arson murders, where the act of setting the fires was the last act perpetrated by the killer at the crime scene, the setting of the fire may not have been some sexually perverted paraphilia with fire that some offenders possess. It might simply have been Cottingham's attempt to lead Manhattan detectives down a blind alley.

Removal of the implements he had brought with him to commit the crimes was an indicator that this killer was highly organized. Sometimes he was careless, such as when leaving the handcuffs on Valerie Ann Street, and, ultimately, not maintaining control of O'Dell, which led to his arrest. But, for the most part, he disassociated himself from the death scene and body location by taking special care to organize the crime scene to minimize any evidence he would have added.

If it is assumed that the M.O. of a killer is only a combination of those actions necessary to commit a murder, then Cottingham in his cases went over and beyond just the act of murder. It was obvious that murder alone wasn't on his mind because his actions went beyond killing and were the core of the signature that he left at five murder and three vicious sexual assault crime scenes, where each crime was characterized by prolonged, bizarre, and ritualistic assaults on the victim. Without hesitation, this killer was methodical, demonstrating his love for torture through his ritualistic acts.

From 1977 through 1980, nowhere throughout the northeastern United States were there any murderers or rapists who matched the sexually sadistic intensity of Richard Cottingham. The specific features of his signature involved his perceived luxury of having ultimate control over each woman for as long as he wanted. He also needed the victims to be alive to suffer through his torture so he, "the master," as he referred to himself to O'Dell, would be sexually satisfied.

The initial symbol of the killer's signature was his need for bondage. Bondage is the ritualized practice of compression and incapacitation through the use of ropes, chains, handcuffs, suffocation, drowning, and a number of improvised methods conditional only to the limits of the killer's imagination. The act of bondage has an almost built-in guarantee of control by rendering a victim motionless to the degree of restraint provided by the implements. When used as a learning step within the sadomasochistic complex, the specialized uses give a lustful pleasure in the administration and receipt of resistance. During the entrapment phase or conning of the victims, Cottingham used Tuinal in a drink to weaken and subsequently incapacitate them. That

was a form of bondage known as chemical restraint. He needed absolute control. However, once the victims were isolated and secure, he awoke them for an active resistance to a variety of distress tortures. The fact that many of them forgot the specific details of what took place during their captivity was of little consequence to Cottingham because he knew they were awake and suffering even if they couldn't remember it later.

In these cases, each victim either had handcuffs in place when found or had deep ligature marks around their wrists and ankles signifying ample restraint. Bondage, in combination with other torturous acts, enhances this killer's sexual arousal with his victims. In addition, although they were not identified by surviving victims, leather slave collars, another form of bondage, were found in Cottingham's murder kit (Fallon, 1980).

As a part of the bondage routine, the killer utilized multiple different efforts to asphyxiate. Forensics revealing the use of tape as a gag, cloth as a gag, manual strangulation, and ligature strangulation were present on most victims. The repeated use of these devices was employed to prevent screaming and to torture the victims by depriving them of their natural instinct of calling out for help. By doing so, the killer heightened the victim's dependency and dread by mute isolation. The sadistic intent is to instrument ritualistically a deprivation that has sensory and emotional feedback to the victim. This process enhanced the victim's responses.

Another implement used in these cases was a belt, a tool for recreational strangulation. This activity allowed the killer the tactile stimulation of squeezing the victim into symbolic or real death. For the sadist, the process of strangulation feeds the ego so that he believes his power is so great he can control life and death. Hence, Cottingham controlled his victim's consciousness as he repeatedly strangled, resuscitated, and again compressed her back into what he perceived as a state of nothingness. Hands, like the belt, were a form of manual strangulation that gave a direct sense of unfettered power, dominance, and supreme control.

The killer in these cases upheld discipline in its crudest and Neanderthal-like form. He used hands and belts to punish the victims for being whores or sexually promiscuous. He repeatedly beat them with fists and belts as a function of degradation. In the process of reducing them from a human to mutilated garbage, he punished them for their "imagined" filth by beating them as a form of corporal discipline. Concurrent with complementary deviances, the pummeling of the victims produced direct evidence of power through blood, bruising, and body markings.

To instill a deeper sense of discipline in his victims, the killer made the victims lick his body, kiss his feet, and call him "master." These acts are designed to force resignation, humility, and submission. Burning the victims' breasts, pubic, and anal regions was a threat of punishment done to create dread and victim anxiety as well as to desecrate their most sexual

parts, what physically and externally made them women. If the victim pled for safety, this fed his sense of power that she had become "broken." However, if she resisted or verbally assaulted him, he viewed that as a challenge and increased the aggression.

The killer in these cases denied the human identity of the victims. Having converted the "whores" into non-human refuse in his mind, he consistently refused at the time of the crime, or later, to have any personal identification with the victims. They were no longer human from the moment he sprang his trap, they became objects after he had discarded them, and he then viewed them with detachment and withdrawal.

The fact that the killer made no attempt to conceal his victims, but to leave them, as garbage, in places where he knew they would eventually be found, is a significant part of the signature. The living victims, with the exception of his last, O'Dell, were discarded, and reducing them from the vibrant participant in the killer's original approach to the position of mindless slave, unable to resist, was Cottingham's goal. The near-death state of his living victims or the death of some others made no difference. The actual fact that some lived through the episode was of little consequence in the killer's mind because his need—as in the cases of other signature sexual predators—to consummate the death of the victim was not necessary. He was not a necrophiliac, only a brutalizer and torturer who left his victims, whether living or dead, like garbage on the floor of a room, underneath sheets, or in a parking lot.

On two occasions, the killer tried to burn "his" garbage in hotel rooms. In other cases, he just discarded them as empty carcasses. Not only were they left in places to be found, but the killer was always careful to dispose of his victims in such a way so he could get away and avoid detection. The locations were considered neutral for this killer. His concept was that he was not associated with those places; therefore, his identity would never be discovered. He was invisible in his own mind.

Another factor in his signature was the constant battering in localized areas of brutalization while each victim was alive. Each victim was made to feel the terror of the unmistakable edge of a sharpened knife. The blows, abrasions, and scrapes caused by a knife to the chest and abdominal areas, the savage biting of each victim on the breasts, and the burning sustained by each victim were examples of his terrorism.

The sheer number of injuries inflicted on each victim kept the killer's need for severe torture and terror as a factor in his signature. The number of injuries indicated the killer was unrelenting in applying traumatic pressure to the psyches of his victims. There were not just one or two injuries sustained by each victim, but many.

The acts of picquerism, such as jabbing, stabbing, cutting, and gouging with a knife or other sharp-pointed instrument for the purpose of sexual gratification, strike terror in living victims. Knives are more fearsome and

unyielding, and their phallic nature as a weapon supersedes any harm the predator can inflict with his penis. Knives are, therefore, sexual weapons psychologically as well as weapons of combat. Accordingly, Cottingham consistently threatened victims with the knife and teased them with superficial cuts and deeper rendering of the flesh on their sacrums, sternums, and breasts. In the latter, the satisfactions were the cutting, tearing, and biting of the flesh. Additional satisfaction was gained from the sensory stimulation of penetration, wounding, and blood loss. This ran consistent with victim pain and terror. The cutting also was a satiation of the power to cut apart and dehumanize the victim into isolated parts and ultimate destruction.

In this series of cases, the last evidence of picquerism was the harvesting of body parts: heads, hands, and breasts. While taking body parts may have been simply an element of the organized cleanup, the question remains: why only the New York victims? One practical reason quite possibly was that he forgot his cuff keys and had to remove parts to reclaim his handcuffs and neck collars. As outrageous as that sounds, it is the needs of the killer that are paramount, not our uninformed perception of his actions. Considering the Hotel Seville case along with the threats he made in the O'Dell case, he removed only the breasts and placed them on the headboard of the bed.

Perhaps, given the killer's penchant for picquerism, if the Hotel Seville victims offended him by resisting in any way, the added pathological punishment was acted out to overpower the threat and the sense of identity the victims had tried to maintain in the face of Cottingham's violence. He need to show his superiority even after he had killed the young women. Hence, harvesting the bodies by cutting off parts and burning the victims' remains indicated a specialized aggression toward these particular women. The flourish of picquerism used in these victims was a signal that he was evolving from being satisfied only by bondage along the violence continuum to a higher level of need: the stabbing, gouging, and cutting of picquerism.

Another important feature of this killer's signature was the absence of ejaculate. This killer was a highly sophisticated sadist whose whole method of satisfaction and gratification orbited around control. Therefore, the absence of ejaculate was to be expected. He enjoyed the process of accomplishing the power of control over his victim so much that he saved his sexual expression for later. That's why he took souvenirs so he could masturbate and satisfy himself sexually at a later time. That's also why he could have an apparently normal sexual relationship with a woman he didn't kill or torture because he had all his little trinkets or trophies, such as the jewelry and clothing of his victims, around him. Unbeknownst to his wife, girlfriends, or other willing sex partners, his fantasy life was driven much beyond what was happening at the moment with that particular partner. In fact, Cottingham would probably say that his fantasies, even during sex in his normal relationships, were always driven by the images of sexual domination of victims and the torture and bondage he

inflicted. His sexual satisfaction, even though to his sex partner he appeared normal, was driven by an intensely perverted sexual fantasy interpretation.

Contrary to the expectations in most murders, in these cases, the sadist is excited by the process of the killing, not the death. In fact, the death may be only an incidental by-product or an organized act of post crime efficiency. In Cottingham's cases, the deaths appeared to be an artifact of his satisfaction. That is, the process of destruction of the victims was the key issue for him. If, for instance, a victim actually died before his act was satisfied, he would have continued to act out verbally and physically until his needs were met. Remember, these actions are for his satisfaction, not anyone else's.

The condition and placement of the bodies also relates to the level of sexual satisfaction Cottingham was seeking. Thinking along traditional homicide investigation lines, the way Cottingham dumped the bodies appeared to be strictly functional to the organized offender. Lead the police astray, throw them different leads, make sure police in different jurisdictions didn't relate the homicides to each other so as to form a series as the basis of a multiagency task force. However, Cottingham wasn't really thinking along these lines. When he left a badly mutilated body abandoned to die alone, it was a strong indicator that this was a conceptual extension of the violence that he had inflicted on the victim. The victim, once vibrant and sexual, then reduced to pleading, agony, and submission, would become a stinking mass of dead meat. And all of it would happen in public. Although an act of cruel irony, it would extend the violence past the actual memory of torture and bondage and satisfy his internal need for displaying cleverness and superiority.

Sometimes we are able to figure out a lot about the killer by the absence of evidence. In these cases, the killer used a religiously tinged motivational structure called the Madonna Complex—in which, if the victim displays any signs of overt aggressive sexuality, she's impure and needs to be tortured so as to extinguish her sexuality—to select victims, justify aggression, and dispose of these women as trash. Although this rationale is a common one for murders of prostitutes, they often try to redeem the victim to purity through the punishment process. However, in these cases, there is no evidence to suggest that he attempted to redeem them, only to punish them. Although one could look at the arson behaviors as a possible attempt at purification, the point would not be supported with the collateral evidence. In fact, the arson appeared to be an act of aggression, for destruction or damnation, rather than an attempt to purify these women from what Cottingham saw as their illicit ways.

Finally, as with many sadists, the killer acknowledged that he liked to play a trick or joke on the victims to demean them even further. In many instances, he would place a plastic revolver within their reach to provide them with false hope. If they tried to use it against him, he watched their terror when they realized it was only part of the torture game. Again, although

cruel jokes display the luxury aspects of the murder in the sadist, Cottingham inadvertently signed his signature by the repetitive use of the plastic toy gun. That is, he used that specific gimmick repeatedly.

Cottingham's internal stresses governed whether he would repeat his crimes on a sporadic or episodic schedule. These assaults and murders were sporadic over a 3-year period. His reliving of each crime was conditional to his satisfactions and developed his motivation for further domination. This is why the chronology of his crimes appeared to wax and wane. But, inside, his motivation was always persistent because his ego was the major driver of his personality.

Cottingham was described as a killer with a "Jekyll and Hyde" personality. Assistant District Attorney of New York Miles Malman told the jury that Cottingham had a "perverted, twisted lust in his mind" that caused him to kill the three women. It was much, much more, of course, but some investigators doubt whether even a rational jury could have comprehended the complex deviance that motivates a predator like Cottingham.

Cottingham did not drug his final victim, Leslie O'Dell, although he certainly had the opportunity, and that was part of his undoing. Perhaps his sexual need required that his victim be completely awake and aware, forcing him to maintain greater control over a struggling victim and pushing him right against the envelope of discovery. Perhaps he wanted to experiment with a fully conscious victim to see if the thrill was greater. But the experiment ultimately failed because the fully conscious O'Dell was not about to submit without a struggle and her screams brought hotel personnel to the scene. How could Cottingham not have seen this? Sometimes sadistic killers delude themselves into thinking that they are really as invincible as they portray themselves to be when, in reality, they're weaker and frailer than their victims. Cottingham failed to see the obvious, didn't reckon on the strength of his streetwise victim, and wound up in the hands of the police, who had responded to a call about a screaming woman. The police discovered a nude prostitute who had been sexually tortured and bound with handcuffs. Cottingham was apprehended fleeing from the motel, his visions of invincibility and power in tatters. Cottingham's house was searched in Lodi, New Jersey, and authorities found his "trophy room" filled with souvenirs from his victims. Only his bravado was left, and even that didn't last very long.

So vivid was Cottingham's signature after numerous murders that a New Jersey prosecutor convinced the court that his "modus operandi in the cases was so unique and novel that it was only personal to Cottingham" (Breslin, 1980). Cottingham's need to torture and mutilate women sexually and brutally set him apart from other killers of his ilk, and the prosecutor who so correctly argued that what he called Cottingham's M.O. uniquely personal had, in effect, argued for an existence of a killer's signature. Of course the calling card that Cottingham left was personal; he was acting out his extreme

behavior disorder from one crime to another. He knew he was sick. He readily admitted to police interrogators when asked about his crimes, "I have a problem with women."

References

Breslin, R. W. (1980, September 17). Twenty-One Count Grand Jury Indictment. Bergen County, NJ: *State v. Richard Cottingham*.

Calo, D. (1980). State's Brief in Support of the Introduction of Evidence Pursuant to R. 55. Hackensack, NJ: Bergen County, *State v. Richard Cottingham*.

Calo, D. (1981, October 20). Letter in Lieu of Brief and Appendix on Behalf of the State of New Jersey. Bergen County, NJ: *State v. Richard Cottingham*.

Denning, E. (1978, May 18). Homicide Report, Maryann Carr Homicide—CH 77–90. Bergen County Prosecutor's Office, NJ.

Denning, E. & Werner, B. (1980, May 28). Memorandum of the Interview of Richard Cottingham. NJ: Bergen County Prosecutor's Office.

Fallon, J. (1980, May 30). Application for Search Warrant. Bergen County, NJ: *State v. Cottingham*.

Geberth, V. (2006). *Practical Homicide Investigation: Tactics, Procedures, and Forensic Techniques.* Boca Raton, FL: CRC Press.

Geiger, S. (1978, October 13). Statement of Susan Geiger. Bergen County Prosecutor's Office, NJ.

Greco, A. & Werner, B. (1980, June 4). Memorandum of the interview of Bruce Huff. NJ: Bergen County Prosecutor's Office.

Keppel, R. & Birnes, W. (1997). *Signature Killers*. New York: Pocket Books.

Napolitano, L. V. (1980, May 6). Autopsy Report: Valerie Street. Bergen County, NJ: Medical Examiner's Office.

Signature Analysis Convicts the Right Man

5

Introduction

As reported in a research report written for the National Institute of Justice (Conners et al., 1996):

> In the early morning of January 24, 1984, a woman was sexually assaulted and murdered in her home by an assailant who had entered through the victim's basement window. The woman died from asphyxiation by hanging. David Vasquez pled guilty to second-degree homicide and burglary (Alford plea) on February 4, 1985. He was sentenced to 35 years in prison. He had pled guilty after allegedly confessing to the crime and reporting details that were not released to the public. Vasquez, who is borderline retarded, later reported that he had only dreamed the crime.
> In addition to Vasquez's guilty plea, the prosecution proffered the following evidence to the court:
>
> - Two witnesses placed Vasquez near the victim's house on the day of the crime.
> - Vasquez could not provide an alibi.
> - Hair analysis of pubic hairs found at the scene were consistent with Vasquez's hair.
> - A guilty plea meant that Vasquez would not be subject to the death penalty upon conviction.
>
> There were no known post-conviction challenges. Vasquez's defense attorneys, however, filed for a suppression of two of his confessions because they were issued without a Miranda warning. The Virginia State laboratory, Cellmark Diagnostics, and Lifecodes, Inc., performed DNA tests on the evidence from several rape–murders thought to be the crimes of the South Side Rapist. All tests inculpated a man named Timothy Spencer as the assailant in rape–murders that were identical in modus operandi (M.O.) to that of the Vasquez incident. Attempts by the Forensic Science Administration at Virginia (FSA) to compare hair found at the scene with Vasquez's blood sample were inconclusive.
>
> The Commonwealth's attorney and Vasquez's defense attorneys filed motions with the governor to grant Vasquez an unconditional pardon. The motions were based on the DNA tests of Spencer and an FBI report that indicated that the Vasquez crime and the Spencer crimes were committed by the

same person. The report also stated that the crimes "were not perpetrated by someone who was mentally deficient." The governor granted the pardon, and Vasquez was released on January 4, 1989. Vasquez had served 5 years of his sentence (Conners, et al., 1996).

Timothy Spencer Cases

The Southside slayer and rapist case is notable not only because it dealt with the crimes, capture, trial, and conviction of a very cunning signature killer but because it marked one of the first cases for which a killer's identification was based on DNA evidence that was subsequently upheld on appeal when the DNA evidence was challenged. This famous case began in Virginia in 1987, when police investigated the rape–murders of four women in Richmond and Arlington. Eventually, detectives arrested Timothy Spencer for those crimes that the press had dubbed "The Southside Slayer" cases, and prosecutors cited as crucial evidence in that series the biologic fluids recovered around each of those murder scenes.

It was during the prosecution's presentation in this death penalty trial of recently released cat burglar Timothy Spencer that DNA genetic "fingerprinting" was first introduced to convince the jury that the man police had arrested was indeed the same man who had left seminal fluids on and in his victims and at the crime scenes. They introduced the DNA evidence again during the penalty phase to argue that the jury should have no hesitation in imposing the death penalty because statistics showed there was no chance they would later find it had been a case of mistaken identity. According to the state's experts, the chances were less than 1 in 700 million that someone other than Timothy Spencer had left the semen at each of the murder scenes (Baker, 1994; *Commonwealth of Virginia v. Timothy Spencer*, 1994).

Virginia prosecutors chose not to overeducate the jury in the arcane science of DNA typing because, first, it was too new and confusing, and, second, they wanted to focus on commonsense human behaviors that the jury could understand, that is, pattern behavior. Therefore, the signature aspects of the Spencer murders were used to set the stage for the conviction, whereas the DNA evidence, brought in afterward, helped convince the jury that they had the right man and could feel confident about sentencing him to death. The strategy worked and helped establish both signature crime-based prosecutions and DNA matching as prosecuting attorneys' viable arguments (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

In 1989, Spencer's convictions were upheld on appeal. The appellate review was a landmark decision to allow DNA evidence at trial because Spencer's murders were the first murder convictions in the nation for which the identity of the killer and the argument for imposition of the death penalty was based on

DNA testimony (Baker, 1994; *Commonwealth of Virginia v. Timothy Spencer*, 1994). Spencer's conviction was such a legal milestone that it prompted the Virginia state crime officials to open the first state DNA laboratory in the country. However, buried in all the appeals and hidden by the headlines over the DNA controversy, was the court's willingness to allow the prosecutor to interpret the crimes as having similar methods of operation, even though there was no expert testimony directly to the similarity of those crimes. The appellate issues brought in on behalf of Timothy Spencer were not only that there were murders very similar in M.O., as pointed out by the prosecuting authorities, but that there was clearly the underlying signature of the killer present at each of the scenes. In Virginia, crimes can be linked by similar M.O. and don't need to be related by a perfect signature. This was a perfect example of a signature killer at work. The prosecutor was correct in his assumptions, and his reasoning was not flawed regarding the aspects of Spencer's M.O. But a closer look at these crimes based on the signature aspects of each murder will conclusively link all four murders to the same rare signature killer. The following descriptions of each crime scene were constructed and taken from the 1988 trial transcripts in *Commonwealth of Virginia v. Timothy Spencer.*

Debbie Dudley Davis

On Saturday, September 19, 1987, between 1 and 2 in the morning, a Southside Richmond resident noticed a strange automobile parked outside his home, camouflaged by the cover of darkness. It looked suspicious to him, but he let it go. When he awoke later at 6:30 that Saturday morning, the car was still there. He noted that the keys were in the ignition, and, incredibly, the engine was running. The home owner called the Richmond Bureau of Police to report the unusual circumstances of this apparently abandoned automobile. The police ran a computer check with the Division of Motor Vehicles records and discovered that the automobile was registered to Debbie Dudley Davis at an address of an apartment only four blocks from where the car was left running. People usually don't leave their cars running all night, at least not blocks away from their home, so the police suspected something was wrong. They followed up by contacting the car's owner.

When they arrived at Davis' apartment at 9:35 A.M., the same morning that the resident reported sighting the car, they received no answer at her front door. Suspecting maybe a stolen car, maybe even violence, they entered the apartment and found Davis' body lying face down across her bed. She was clad only in a pair of shorts. A black sock was tied in a knot around her neck as a ligature into which the killer had inserted a section of vacuum cleaner pipe, which he seemed to have used as a ratchet-torque device similar to the way one would use a stick to tighten a tourniquet. The act of twisting the pipe clockwise tightened the sock around her neck. Remarkably, the

killer had tied shoestrings that bound the victim's left wrist, pulling it up the front of her chest. The shoestring traveled through the sock around her neck and down to her right wrist, where it was tied securely enough to hold her right wrist in the middle of her back at waist level. This was a strange type of bondage (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Dr. David Wiecking, the chief medical examiner of Richmond, determined that the cause of Davis' death was ligature strangulation, which had been applied with "very extreme pressure" (*Commonwealth of Virginia v. Timothy Spencer,* 1994). The ligature, when tightened down and "twisted two or three times" with the vacuum cleaner pipe, cut "into the larynx, the voice box, and the muscles on the side of the neck" (see Figure 5.1). The "intense blood pressure congestion" in the victim's head due to the ligature had caused hemorrhage in one of her eyes. The victim also suffered bruising to her nose and mouth, as though she had her nose rubbed up against something. No defensive wounds were found on the hands or arms.

After the victim's blue cut-off shorts were removed at the postmortem examination, two "characteristically Negroid" hairs were found when Davis's pubic area was combed. The medical examiner also determined that the posterior portion of the victim's vagina was bruised. Microscopic examination of smears made from the rectal and vaginal swabs obtained from Davis' body revealed the presence of spermatozoa.

Figure 5.1 Crime scene photograph of the ligature around victim's neck with vacuum cleaner pipe attached. (Photograph courtesy of Virginia Attorney General's Office.)

A careful crime scene examination enabled police investigators to discover physical evidence that eventually would be connected to the killer. First, there were three semen stains on the comforter next to the victim on her bed. On top of the fitted bed sheet, police located four additional semen stains, all of which could be processed as evidence.

The intruder's point of entry to Davis's apartment was gained by raising the screen in a kitchen window located approximately 8 feet above the ground. Under the window was a rocking chair that had been stolen from the porch of a nearby apartment sometime between Friday afternoon and Saturday morning. Inside the kitchen immediately beneath the window was the sink and counter top, which appeared to be virtually untouched by the killer because none of the items around the sink or window sill were disturbed upon entry. There was no evidence of much of a struggle in Davis's apartment, except that her eyeglasses and toothbrush were found on the floor of the hallway leading to her bedroom (see Figure 5.2).

Dr. Susan Hellams

Two weeks after the murder of Debbie Dudley Davis, the killer struck again. This time, his victim was Dr. Susan Elizabeth Hellams, a resident in neurosurgery at the Medical College of Virginia, who was last seen alive about 10:50

Figure 5.2 The open kitchen window in Davis's apartment with no disturbance on the counter. (Photograph courtesy of Virginia Attorney General's Office.)

in the evening on October 2, 1987, in the area of 9th and Capitol Streets in the City of Richmond, preparing to return to her Southside Richmond home located at 514 West 31st Street. Dr. Hellams' husband, Marcel Sleg, returned to the couple's home between 1:30 and 1:40 on the morning of October 3. Knowing that his wife's shift had ended, he expected her to be already home, but, after taking a shower, Sleg got worried that his wife was not in bed. Maybe she was still held up at the hospital, he soon discovered otherwise when he opened their bedroom closet and found her dead body face up on the closet floor. The official police communications center recorded Sleg's telephone call for assistance at 1:56 A.M.

On that same day, Timothy Spencer resided at 1500 Porter Street in Richmond, a distance of approximately 1.8 miles from the Hellams' residence. Detectives clocked the distance, finding that it took approximately 17 minutes to walk that far. The Linden Tower Offender Aid and Restoration of Richmond records showed that Spencer signed out of the home at 7:45 P.M., on October 2, and did not return until the following morning at 1:45. He had just walked out of the house minutes before Sleg returned to find his wife's body.

Susan Hellams' body was nude above the waist. Her skirt and half slip had been pulled up, and her underpants had been removed. She was wearing red socks with one red shoe still in place on her left foot. The medical examiner observed a musky odor about her body, reminiscent of seminal fluids.

Around her neck, police found two different ligatures. One was made from a red belt and the other from a blue cloth belt, one tied to the other. Hellams' wrists were tied tightly together behind her back with a standard brown electrical extension cord. She had a second kind of binding around her wrist that consisted of a blue, fine-fabric cord, which was actually another belt. A red-colored belt secured the lower portion of Hellams' left leg at the knee, and a loop of that still remaining that would have accommodated the other ankle (see Figure 5.3). It looked as though an opportunistic killer had used whatever ligature paraphernalia he was able to find in the clothing closet.
The victim's house appeared secure from a quick look around, especially when one notes the 6-foot high fence that enclosed the entire back yard of the residence. However, there was a second-story porch immediately outside the victim's bedroom window that provided easy access to anyone able to scale the fence. Police concluded that this was the point of entry, because a large portion of the screen from the bedroom window had been cut and removed and was found on the floor of the porch. Mr. Sleg remembered that the screen and window were intact when he last left the house (see Figure 5.4).

Dr. Marcella Fierto, executive medical examiner of the Central District, Commonwealth of Virginia, performed the autopsy on Susan Hellams and concluded that ligature strangulation officially had caused Hellams' death. In the initial confrontation with the killer, Hellams sustained a fractured nose, a blunt force injury to the lower lip that caused bleeding and swelling, and

Figure 5.3 Red socks on victim's feet and belt for binding. (Photograph courtesy of Virginia Attorney General's Office.)

Figure 5.4 Second-floor window was the point of entry. (Photograph courtesy of Virginia Attorney General's Office.)

various other contusions and abrasions about the face. "Curvilinear marks" with "black material embedded in the abrasion" were found on the back of the victim's right leg. In the opinion of the medical examiner, such marks were typical of a shoe print pattern. She had been kicked or stomped by a crazed sexual killer.

The medical examiner also found body fluids on the victim's back and in the gluteal fold, right beneath the buttocks. An indication of sexual assault was also confirmed by the discovery of small mucosal tears of the anal ring. The medical examiner testified that these injuries are consistent with the anus having been penetrated "by a hard object, such as a penis."

The Commonwealth's expert serologist identified spermatozoa on the swabs taken from the victim's vagina, rectum, and perianal region. That same serologist also identified seminal fluid and spermatozoa on Hellams' skirt and slip. It looked as if the killer could not control his own ejaculation or had deliberately ejaculated onto the adjacent material. In the follow-up examination of a sample of Timothy Spencer's blood after his arrest, the analysis revealed that Spencer is a type O secretor, PGM type 1, PGM subtype 1+, and peptidase A type 1. Only 13% of the population, including men, women, and children, have this particular combination of blood types. Hellams was determined to be a non-secretor, PGM type 2-1, PGM subtype 2+1-, and peptidase A type 1. Marcel Sleg was found to be a non-secretor, PGM type 2-1, and PGM subtype 2+1+.

The serologist identified type O secretions on the swabs taken by the medical examiner from the victim's perianal area. The serologist also identified type O secretions in the seminal fluid found on the victim's skirt and slip. The serologist testified that the identified secretions must have originated from a third party because both Hellams and Sleg were non-secretors. The expert further stated that the secretions in the seminal fluid found on the victim's skirt and slip were consistent with Spencer's type and inconsistent with Sleg's type. In addition, the secretions in the seminal fluid found on the perianal swabs were consistent with a combination of the blood types of Spencer and the victim and inconsistent with a combination of the blood types of the victim and her husband.

Later, Spencer's blood sample and a sample of the seminal fluid found on the victim's slip were subjected to a "DNA Printing" procedure. The DNA printing procedure established that the DNA molecules extracted from Spencer's known blood sample matched the DNA molecules extracted from the seminal fluid found on the victim's slip, hence the basis of DNA analysis used to identify an assailant.

Diane Cho

Diane Cho was a 15-year-old girl of Korean descent who lived with her parents and brother in a Chesterfield County apartment complex. On the night of Saturday, November 21, 1987, at about 8 o'clock, Diane had dinner at home with her family. After that, her parents gave Diane a haircut and she gave her brother one too. Diane retired to her bedroom at about 10:00 P.M.. Her parents heard her typing in her room about 11:30 P.M., but heard no sounds from her room thereafter. The parents slept in the bedroom next to Diane's and heard nothing throughout the night. Early the next morning, her parents left the apartment to go to work and assumed that Diane was still asleep.

Mr. and Mrs. Cho returned home at about 2:00 P.M. that afternoon. They found Diane's body face down on the bed, partially covered by a sheet. Her hands had been bound securely behind her back with a length of rope. Another rope was tied tightly around her neck with a slip knot. The end of that rope came over her back and was tied to her hands. Her body was nude, and her mouth was covered with duct tape. A "figure 8" or "infinity sign" had been painted on her left hip with fingernail polish. She was dead as the result of ligature strangulation (see Figure 5.5).

Figure 5.5 Infinity sign on victim written in fingernail polish. (Photograph courtesy of Virginia Attorney General's Office.)

The medical examiner examined Diane's body at the crime scene and estimated the time of death at 6 to 12 hours earlier, probably while Mr. and Mrs. Cho were still in the house. As in the cases of Susan Hellams and Debbie Davis, there were no signs of struggle in the room, and nothing was disturbed in the apartment except the screen covering the window in Diane's room. The window was unlocked and the screen was found on the ground outside. The screen frame had been broken and removed from the window by her intruder. In all instances of this series, including Cho's, the intruder's M.O. matched that of a cat burglar who was skilled in gaining silent entrance.

Miss Cho's body was examined by Dr. Marcella Fierto, who had also examined Dr. Hellams; she found acute vaginal and anal injuries, and two bruises on top of the head were located. Her vagina was lacerated and torn. The entire area of her hymen was torn. Did the killer know his victim was this young and a virgin? Miss Cho's anal ring showed some redness at the 7 o'clock position, and there were smears of blood on the buttocks and genital area. Seminal fluid was found in the victim's vagina, and an unusually large amount of seminal fluid was found in three separate stains on a sheet taken from the victim's bed. Bloodstains were also found on the sheet, as well as a single negroid hair. Mr. and Mrs. Cho stated that no black persons had ever visited them in the apartment.

As a result of his being on probation from a prior prison sentence, Spencer was residing in a halfway house on Porter Street, in Richmond, at the time of Diane Cho's murder. As might be expected from this series of cases, the halfway house was about 6 miles from the Cho's apartment. The record at the Halfway house on the night of November 21, 1987, showed that Spencer had signed out and left at 7:15 P.M.. He did not return until more than 24 hours later at 8:25 P.M. the next day. He was arrested on January 20, 1988, at the halfway house. At the time of the arrest, the police discovered, on the fabric covering the box spring under Spencer's mattress, a "figure 8" or "infinity sign." The words "I hope" were printed above this mark.

A serologist examined the known sample of Diane's blood, the known sample of Spencer's blood, secretions found on vaginal swabs taken from the victim, and the material taken from the stains on the bed sheet. The serologist made a comparative blood type and enzyme analysis of the blood samples, secretions, and stains. The victim was identified as a type A secretor, PGM type 2-1, PGM subtype 2+1+, and peptidase A type 1. Spencer was identified as a type O secretor, PGM type 1, PGM subtype 1+, and peptidase A type 1.

The expert testified that a bed sheet stain would probably be pure seminal fluid. This sample corresponded to Spencer's blood type and enzyme grouping in all respects. Spencer belongs to a group comprising approximately 13% of the population that could have been the source of this stain. The vaginal specimen and the other bed sheet stains were mixed with blood. They were consistent with a mixture of Spencer's blood type and enzyme grouping with

that of the victim. In addition, a microscopic examination of the hair taken from the bed sheet revealed it was "microscopically similar" to a known sample of Spencer's underarm hair.

Now there were three dead women sexually attacked in the same general area within a period of months by a killer who was able to gain entrance using basic cat burglar skills and who was so silent, he was able to kill while a victim's family members were right down the hall. He was a killer able to exploit the resources at the crime scene; he killed quickly and seemed to take immediate sexual pleasure at the crime scene. But, typically in a series like this, there would be more victims until the invisible killer was stopped.

Susan Tucker

On the evening of Tuesday, December 1, 1987, the nude body of Susan Tucker, who was married but living alone, was found lying face down and crossway on the bed in the ransacked master bedroom of her Arlington townhouse. A slip-knotted rope was tied around Tucker's neck; the free end of the knotted rope had been used to tie her hands behind her back (see Figure 5.6). The

Figure 5.6 Crime scene photograph of victim's hands tied behind her back and around her neck. (Photograph courtesy of Virginia Attorney General's Office.)

medical examiner determined the cause of death to be strangulation by ligature, and she had been dead 3 to 5 days before her body was found.

When Tucker's body was discovered, a blue sleeping bag was partially draped over her buttocks, a brown blanket was underneath her, and her nightgown was on the bed. There were large semen stains on all three items. Crime laboratory experts determined that "pubic hairs of Negroid origin" were found on the blanket, in the bathroom sink, and on the counter around the sink. Negroid pubic hairs also were found on a washcloth that apparently had been taken from Tucker's bathroom and dropped on a bush a short distance from her home.

Tucker's murderer forcibly entered her townhouse by breaking glass—again, if done surreptitiously, a cat burglar's skill. The intruder broke a sliding basement window located under the balcony at the rear of the house. Each side of the window was measured by Detective Horgas at 18 inches by 14 inches. The window had been secured by a wooden dowel rod, but once the window was broken the rod was easily removed and the window slid to the open position. Detective Horgas found the rod outside the window. As one might expect from a crime scene with glass breakage, the police took samples of the glass to keep as standards to compare against glass fragments that may be located in the suspect's clothing, assuming, as is usually the case, that a transfer of materials took place at the crime scene.

On January 20, 1988, Arlington County Police arrested Spencer, a black male, in the City of Richmond on a warrant charging burglary. At the time of his arrest, police seized a camouflage jacket. After advising him of his rights, a police officer asked Spencer to voluntarily give blood, hair, and saliva samples. Although the officer told Spencer he was charged with burglary, Spencer asked if this had anything to do with the rape. When the officer informed him that the crime had occurred in Arlington, Spencer inquired, "Does this have anything to do with the murder then?" These statements would later come to haunt Spencer, because they were admitted as evidence against him at trial, indicating Spencer's prior knowledge of these crimes.

Spencer had visited his mother's Arlington home over the Thanksgiving holiday, arriving Thanksgiving morning, November 26, and departing the following Sunday, November 29. Spencer's mother lived approximately seven blocks from Tucker's townhouse.

The medical examiner who performed the autopsy obtained oral, rectal, and vaginal swabs and a blood sample from Tucker's body. The vaginal swab was taken by inserting the swab as high in the vaginal cavity as it would go; the swab did not contact the external genitalia. The medical examiner's microscopic examination revealed "four to eight" intact, nonmotile sperm in smears made from the vaginal swab. No sperm was observed in the smears made from the anal and oral swabs.

A forensic serologist who subsequently made smears from the swabs taken by the medical examiner found two sperm on the rectal smears but none on either the vaginal or oral smears. The serologist explained that she had to rehydrate the dry swabs before testing them. Consequently, the water diluted any seminal fluid present on the swabs, making the sperm more difficult to detect.

Forensic analysis established that the negroid pubic hairs found on the washcloth, on the blanket from Tucker's bed, and on the bathroom sink were microscopically consistent in all identifiable characteristics with known samples of Spencer's pubic hair. Forensic scientists also determined that glass fragments found in Spencer's camouflage jacket matched the optical properties of Tucker's broken basement window. Only 2% of glass examined at the state laboratory has had the same optical properties.

Analysis of the semen stains found on Tucker's nightgown, the blanket, and the sleeping bag established that the stains were left by a "secretor," that is, a person whose blood characteristics are expressed in other bodily fluids. Analysis further determined that the individual had blood type O and enzyme groupings of PGM type 1, PGM subtype 1+, and peptidase A type 1. Analysis of Spencer's blood and saliva samples showed that they matched in all respects the secretions found at the crime scene. This particular combination of blood type and enzyme groupings is shared by approximately 13% of the population. Spencer's blood sample and the semen collected from the nightgown and the sleeping bag also were subjected to "DNA printing."

"DNA," which at this point most people recognize from televised trials if not from basic science, is the abbreviation for deoxyribonucleic acid, the chemical compound that carries an individual's genetic information. The DNA printing technique was used to compare DNA molecules extracted from Spencer's blood with DNA molecules extracted from the semen found at the crime scene. The DNA printing test established that the genetic material in Spencer's blood sample had the same characteristics as the genetic material in the semen stains on the nightgown and the sleeping bag. Such characteristics would be present in one of every 135 million black individuals. There are approximately ten million adult black males in the United States.

Connecting Spencer to the Murders

Debbie Davis worked in a bookstore in Cloverleaf Mall. Dr. Susan Hellams went shopping there and had negotiated checks on September 22, 1987, at the bookstore where Debbie Davis worked. Diane Cho and her best friend frequented the same mall, as well as a shopping center across from the mall where a drugstore is located. An open jar of Vaseline found at the Hellams crime scene had been purchased at that drugstore after June 15, 1987.

On January 9, 1988, at night, a detective observed Spencer standing around in Chesterfield Mall for about an hour. Diane Cho lived nearby and had often gone there. After leaving Chesterfield Mall, Spencer went to Cloverleaf Mall, where he remained inside for about half an hour. When he was arrested on January 20, Spencer falsely denied that he had ever been to either place.

At the time of Davis's murder, Spencer was living in a Richmond residence approximately 2.7 miles from her apartment. A walk between her apartment and Spencer's residence takes about 37 minutes. Spencer had left his residence at 7:30 P.M. on Friday, September 18, and had not returned until 12:30 A.M. on Saturday, September 19. Davis, who had a telephone conversation with her parents Friday evening, was last known to have been alive between 8:30 P.M. and 9:00 P.M. Friday.

Forensic analysis established that the two negroid hairs combed from Davis's pubic area were consistent with Spencer's underarm hair. Analysis of the semen stains found on Davis's comforter and bed sheet showed that the stains had been deposited by a secretor. Analysis of Spencer's blood and saliva samples established that Spencer, who is a secretor with blood type O, PGM type 1, PGM subtype 1+, and peptidase A type 1, was included in a group—comprising approximately 13% of the population—that could have contributed the seminal fluid found on Davis' comforter and bed sheet.

Spencer's blood sample and the semen collected from the comforter and from the bed sheet were subjected to a DNA print identification, which established that the DNA molecules extracted from Spencer's blood were identical to the DNA molecules extracted from the semen stains at the Davis crime scene. Spencer is a black male. The statistical likelihood of finding duplication of Spencer's particular DNA pattern in the population of North American blacks is one in 705 million.

Spencer had been released from prison to a halfway house in Richmond on September 4, 1987, just two weeks before he raped and murdered Davis. Therefore, he had to sign in and sign out of the house, establishing his presence in the house whenever he was there and his absence when he had signed out. Forensic evidence presented during the penalty phase established that Spencer also raped and murdered another Richmond woman in October 1987, and raped and murdered a woman in Arlington in late November 1987. Each of these victims had been strangled to death by strikingly similar methods. Spencer had been convicted of six prior burglaries, three as an adult and three as a juvenile. His past criminal record also disclosed that he had been convicted of three counts of trespassing, sometimes a precursor to a cat burglar career.

Spencer presented six witnesses who gave testimony in mitigation. According to these witnesses, Spencer had been a shy, quiet, nonviolent person. He was a "loner." None of these witnesses could believe that he committed the crimes against Davis.

Modus Operandi

The physical evidence in these four cases overwhelmingly linked Spencer positively to each murder. In support of the Commonwealth prosecutor's contention, the prosecutor's closing argument described several points of similarity linking the cases together.

First, he said, each of the crimes occurred during a 90-day period while Spencer was residing in a Richmond halfway house following his release from the penitentiary, and each occurred, as the records showed, when he had signed out of the halfway house overnight. The Arlington murder of Susan Tucker occurred while he was signed out to visit his mother in Arlington, again, a point established by the records.

Second, each of the four victims was killed by ligature strangulation, a method, while not entirely unique in and of itself, can be applied in a unique way in combination with other types of assault. This was the case in the Spencer signature. Third, each of the four victims had been subjected to forcible rape and sodomy at the time of her murder. Fourth, each of the four victims was overcome quickly, without an opportunity to struggle or call for help. None showed defensive injuries and there was no sign of a struggle. The evidence was consistent with the four victims' being overcome while asleep. In no case was there evidence of injury by a weapon. Fifth, in each case, entry to the victim's home was gained through a window, either by cutting a screen or breaking glass. Sixth, each of the victims was described as a white or Asian female of a "stocky" body build.

Seventh, and very important, the type of ligature strangulation had a specific signature. Each victim was found strangled by a neck ligature and with her hands tied. In three of the four cases, the neck ligature was also tied to the bindings around the hands. This meant the killer had the ability to adapt materials found at the crime scene into a unique configuration in which the binding was also part of the strangulation process. Eighth, all four victims were found in their bedrooms, indicating that the killer was preying on their defenselessness and inability to resist rather than luring them into a trap. Ninth, the murderer had made an effort to hide or partially cover each body before leaving the scene, which we know is an indicator of a specific type of sexual crime. Tenth, each of the killings occurred during a weekend, indicating something about the killer's travel pattern or the way he might have stalked his victims. Eleventh, unusually large amounts of seminal fluid were found outside the body of each victim, indicating the killer's lack of control. Twelfth, the source of the seminal fluid was, in each case, a secretor having Spencer's blood and enzyme types, a combination found in 13% of the population.

Finally, in each of the four cases, the source of the seminal fluid was a person having either the same "DNA print" or the same "DQ-Alpha

genotype" as Spencer. As previously noted, the "DQ-Alpha genotype" present in this case, when combined with the blood type and enzyme characteristics, resulted in a combination found in less than 1% of the population. In the other three cases, where DNA printing could be utilized, the probability of the source's being anyone other than Spencer was infinitesimally small.

Signature Aspects of the Four Murders

In a hearing for the admission of evidence, Warren Von Schuch, Chief Deputy Commonwealth's Attorney, aptly described the signature components of the four murders to the court. He portrayed the signature of a killer as what the killer does at the scenes that is unique and unusual.

> In each one of these crimes, the defendant did something that was totally, absolutely unnecessary to the commission of the offense. It was purposely and methodically done, and it was done after the commission of the offense. The court will look at the photograph of Debbie Davis. You have heard the testimony that she was raped. Yet, when she was found after the rape had occurred and after she was strangled, her shorts were placed back on her, and her buttocks and genital area were covered. Part of her body was covered after the offense.
>
> If the court will look at the case of Susan Tucker, you will find that after the sexual assault, after the homicide, a sleeping bag was deliberately placed over her buttocks covering the genital area, concealing part of the body. In the case of Diane Cho, after the sexual assault, after the strangulation, a sheet was placed over her body covering her buttocks and the genital area.
>
> One victim, Dr. Susan Hellams, suffered significant injuries. One victim, Dr. Susan Hellams, suffered substantial bruising on her back, on her leg, with pattern injuries. She suffered anal tears. She was, I submit to the court, based on the physical evidence, particularly the evidence about the type of strangulation, the petechia, showing that the strangulation was of a longer duration, a more tortuous, perhaps an on-off turning. It took longer for her to die, after being beaten the worst. After that, Dr. Hellams was concealed totally, in a closet, totally unnecessary, totally willful, and subsequent to the commission of the crime.
>
> I cannot tell the court whether it was denial or shame, or whether it's streetwise trying to make the scene look as normal as possible. I don't know. But in each one of these cases, there was a deliberate effort to conceal the body, or part of the body, that was totally unnecessary; it was totally willful, and it was subsequent to the commission of the crime. That, I submit, is a signature in all four of these crimes that tell you something in the subconscious in each one of these cases. (Von Schuch, 1988)

Spencer's Signature

Timothy Spencer's murder scenes were classical signatures of the anger–retaliatory type of rape–murderer. This type of killer is characterized by sexualized violence against women who are perceived to have caused injury or threat to the self-image of the killer. In the set-up for the Virginia series of rape–homicides, the killer felt nettled and thwarted by women who criticized or rejected him. Often those women may have been a mother, wife, supervisor, or other women who can, at times, ignore or reject the potential killer. Given the foil backdrop for the motivational intent of the anger–retaliatory type of killer, it is common for the targeted victims to be in the same age range or older than the murderer. Also, given the fact that the killer may be pathologically related to the intended target, it is quite common for this type of offender to search out scapegoats or substitute victims for acting out their sexual aggressions.

It is rare for a signature killer or serial killer to actually attack the real woman who is aggravating him. When the victim is actually the intended source of rage, this is usually classified as a domestic crime, crime of passion, or family crime that is many times solved within minutes of the crime by the killer's on-the-spot confession. This is not the case of the signature killer, who specifically cannot kill the target of his rage because of the power and dominance she holds over him. Therefore, he seeks surrogate targets whom he has stalked or trapped or who cross his path completely by chance.

Because the signature killer needs to assuage the real, twisted, or manufactured wrongs done against him, it is necessary for him to pick substitute victims that best meet the offending characteristics of the original target. For instance, the victims in Spencer's murders were all overweight and all, save the 15-year-old, were within his age group. Of note is the fact that Cho "appeared" older than her actual age to the uninformed.

Inasmuch as the killer must have available to him a ready scapegoat victim for whenever the need arises, it is common for them to patrol and look for potential victims prior to the murder. In many instances, the pre-selection of future victims allows the killer to become familiar with their characteristics, habits, and routines. Although the victims may have at most only a casual knowledge of him, he knows much more about them because he has stalked them. The first three victims of Spencer were associated in some way with the Cloverleaf Mall. In the case of Dr. Susan Hellams, she negotiated checks on September 22, 1987, at the bookstore where Debbie Davis worked. The doctor was murdered on October 2, 1987. Hence, Timothy Spencer had several weeks to plan and select a strategy for entrance to her house and commit the rape–murder.

Despite available transportation, the anger–retaliatory killer is energized by approaching the victim contact scene on foot. Calling upon his skills as a

breaking-and-entering artist, a prototypical cat burglar is able to gain entrance through various types of breaking and entering and take effective control of the crime scene. Astonishingly, he can do this even when there are other members of the household present while the killer is breaking and entering and assaulting the victim. It must be noted that the victims did not display any defense-type wounds. This meant that the killer surprised them by entering their residences without notice. In fact, in the Diane Cho case, the killer was so effective at gaining immediate control that her family was unaware of the diabolical assault and murder committed in the next room. His murders showed a preference for indoor crime scenes with which he was comfortable. This killer's method of operation of entering Debbie Davis's residence through an 8-foot-high kitchen window without disturbing items in his path demonstrated that Davis's killer was a cat burglar extraordinaire.

Although unknown as a specific fact, this type of killer would undoubtedly carry a knife for a threat and for symbolic reasons. Inasmuch as it was his intent to cause pain and suffering in retaliation against the perceived wrongs committed against himself, each victim felt the percussion of his fist and the percussion of his penis used as a sexual object and as a weapon of violence. Once the victim had been sexually assaulted and punished, he progressed to the killing phase of bondage and strangulation. This, as is the case in every signature crime, is part of an arc of violence that takes place at each crime scene beginning with the initial victim contact, the overcoming of the victim's defenses, the assault, the killing phase, postmortem activities, and the positioning of the body. The killer may either be a control-type who will not ejaculate at the crime scene or a less experienced type who will. The latter is usually easier to identify because he will leave fluids for DNA and other blood analysis.

Another recognizable signature of the anger–retaliatory murder scene is the placement of his dead victim in a position that symbolically signifies that the victim cannot see him leave. This is why it is extremely important for investigators to determine from the evidence the last actions of the killer with his victim before leaving. In this Virginia series of murders, Spencer placed each body into a submissive position, covering the sexualized body parts from immediate view and closing their particular role in his search for payback and revenge. In each murder, once the deed was done and his satisfactions were complete, he exited the crime scene with a feeling of triumph and devoid of any guilt. Ultimately, from his point of view, they got what they deserved. His anger was sated for the time being, until he saw another potential victim who roused whatever it was that he was fighting. Then he went on the attack again, possibly hoping to quiet his demons but never succeeding.

In each of Timothy Spencer's murders, the use of ligatures and ropes exceeded the necessary violence to control the victims for rape–murder. The signature of pathological bondage became evident in the tying of hands with

linkage to each victim's throat. In addition to the hand ligatures controlling the amount of pressure put on the throat, the vacuum cleaner pipe in the Davis case was a tool of refinement by which he could play and provide varying amounts of leverage on her neck. Therefore, while having sexual intercourse with his victims, he could regulate his tools of compression by twisting or pulling on the cords attached to their necks. Undoubtedly, the effect of this behavior probably caused the victims to gasp, pant, and rebel ineffectively against his assault. This reaction to the killer's taunts was sexually exciting for the killer. To find consistently throughout all four murder scenes the evidence of ejaculation demonstrated a truly rare signature in a series of murder cases.

We have seen in previous signature cases the absence of semen as the killer progressed along in his series. In these cases, however, once the sexual act was complete, the killing phase showed the predominant satisfaction through the percussive actions of strangulation. Here, like the early forms of bondage, the direct casual relationship between offender and victim was literally life and death. Eventually, for his triumphal act of murder, he chose strangulation as the mechanism of death because the omnipotence of applying percussive control over the victim made him feel powerful and sated his emotional needs. Likewise, within the same pathological continuum, he employed duct tape for practical and lustful needs. Although the violence levels with each victim changed according to the needs of the killer, the constant pathological index revealed consistent levels of sophistication within the bondage continuum. Leaving the infinity sign on Diane Cho meant "forever." Here, with the sign on a young virgin, he marked the taking, keeping, and sealing of the victim.

Although the bondage continuum provided the primary and killing satisfactions, these were supported also by behaviors of the domination–submission continuum. While acting out the trumped up anger and grievances against each victim, the killer energized the scenario by usurping power through percussive hits to the face and body, a generalized beating and shoe prints left on one victim. Inasmuch as the domination of the offender caused submission by each of the victims, he could feel, smell, and touch the transition of power from each victim to himself. Akin to his need for control and punishment, he systematically degraded, humiliated, and incapacitated the victims. Again, while acting out his anger against the substitute victims, he used degradation and sexual assault for expressing contempt and hostility toward them.

Following each murder, he laid three of the four victims crosswise on their beds, face down in a defeated position. One exception, Dr. Hellams, was positioned in the bottom of a closet in a hidden and submissive position. Here, despite the satisfactions from the assault and killing practices, he refused to leave the crime scene until all signs or symbols of submission

were in place. Of interest, it was noted that the killer redressed Debbie Davis in a pair of shorts, placed a sheet over the buttocks of Diane Cho, and left a blanket over the buttocks of Susan Tucker. As for Dr. Hellams in the closet, the doors provided nonvisual contact of the area. Although it may be easy to assume that the slayer had a moment of decency and covered them, this type of activity is inconsistent with the degradation process. Instead, it was much more likely that he covered them like a lid on a trash can covers the refuse of the past. That is, sexually sadistic killers have left their victims as trash, similar to the conditions found at the body recovery sites of Richard Cottingham (see Chapter 4). But in Spencer's cases, he simply used the covering for an exit symbol from the scene. It was, far from any motives of decency, that he expressed symbolic and visual contempt for them in life and death. Having discarded them like a used condom in the bedroom trash, the killer could exit the crime scene with satisfaction and a feeling of triumph.

The least apparent pathological signature expressed repeatedly at the Spencer crime scenes was picquerism. Although it is unknown, but believed that the murderer carried a knife to each crime scene, it appears that the primary act of a penetrating weapon was that of his penis. That is, although the penis was used for primary sexual satisfaction, the vaginal and anal tears indicate that he used his penis as a tool for causing penetrating pain and disfigurement. While using his penis as a substitute wound-inflicting and penetrating object, the violence did provide blood and visual indicators of the assault. Given the repeat behaviors in each case, it appeared that he was on the beginning cusp of picquerism and would have progressed to stabbing and cutting if he was not apprehended.

Vernon Geberth (2006) summarized Spencer's signature in a special way: "In each of the incidents, the women had been raped and sodomized by their attacker after he had accosted them in their sleep. Each victim had been strangled to death with a ligature. Each of the victims was found face down and had been similarly bound with her hands tied behind her back. This signature-crime tactic was used in each of the subsequent prosecutions as well as the penalty phase hearings on each of the convictions."

Timothy Spencer was simply an angry killer who, upon his release from prison, simply "went nova" and committed a brutal series of sexual murders. His case is closed. In 1994, after all his appeals had been denied, Timothy Wilson Spencer was executed by the Commonwealth of Virginia (*Commonwealth of Virginia v. Timothy Spencer*, 1994).

References

Anderson, J. & Fishman, C. (1984, February 7). Manassas man held on murder charge in attorney's death. *The Washington Post*.

Baker, P. (1994, April 28). In grim distinction. Va. killer is 1st to die based on DNA test. *The Washington Post*.

Conners, E., Lundregan, T., Miller, N., & McEwan, T. (1996). *Convicted by Juries, Exonerated by Science: Case Studies in the Use of DNA Evidence to Establish Innocence after Trial.* Research Report: National Institute of Justice, Washington D.C.

Geberth, V. (2006). *Practical Homicide Investigation: Tactics, Procedures, and Forensic Techniques.* Boca Raton, FL: CRC Press.

Keppel, R. & Birnes, W. (1997). *Signature Killers*. New York: Pocket Books.

Priest, A. (1988, May 4). Arlington reopens 1984 rape-murder case. *The Washington Post*.

Timothy W. Spencer, Petitioner-Appellant, v. Edward W. Murray, Director; Commonwealth of Virginia, Respondents-Appellees, 18 F.3d; 1994 U.S. App. LEXIS 1662.

U.P.I. (1988, April 30). Suspect linked to serial rapes, Richmond, VA.

Von Schuch, W. (1988). Transcripts of the arguments of Warren Von Schuch, Chief Deputy Commonwealth's Attorney, *Commonwealth of Virginia v. Timothy Spencer.*

The Picquerism Signature

6

Clairemont Killer

Cleophus Prince Jr., or the "Clairemont Killer," as he was dubbed by the local San Diego media, stabbed to death six women, murders that exemplified the picquerism signature. No other murder spree had gripped the city so severely, captivating the media and the neighborhoods where the murders took place. The Clairemont Killer enjoyed an often unrecognized form of sexual satisfaction called "picquerism," which as perverted and gruesome as it sounds, is sexual pleasure gained by stabbing, cutting, or slicing of another person. Vernon Geberth (2006) defines picquerism as "the sexual inclination to stab, pierce, or cut—obtaining sexual gratification from the shedding of blood, tearing of flesh, and/or observing such pain and suffering of a victim who is subjected to this activity." This particular form of sexual deviation uses secondary mechanisms for satiating sexualized-power needs via the percussion of penetration and rendering of flesh. That is, the specific focus and intent of picquerism is to instrument domination, mastery, and deviant sexual satisfactions by the "process" of penetration, be it, cutting, stabbing, slicing, biting, sniper activity, or cutting of animals, and/or flesh-like materials. The bloodletting, odors, and victim screams are harmonic and simply supplementary aspects of the primary purpose (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Murder of Tiffany Schultz

In typical fashion, the investigation into the series of murders attributed to the Clairemont Killer began with a routine call to patrol officers to investigate a 911 report of a woman down. The reporting party had found his girlfriend in the bedroom covered with blood. Officers arrived at 3107 Cowley Way at the Canyon Ridge Condominiums in the Clairemont area of San Diego at 9:01 P.M. on January 12, 1990, having received the boyfriend's report. Their car was flagged down as it approached the apartments and directed to Unit #202. A passerby told the officers that there were two "guys" upstairs and a "dead girl" in the bedroom. The officers were ready for anything.

After walking up a short flight of fourteen stairs, the officers stopped at the threshold of the front door of the second-story apartment, observed that the front door was wide open, and overheard a male screaming and crying. In plain view, they could see the victim, a white female in her early 20s, lying

on the tan carpet of the northwest bedroom in a supine position with her legs spread apart and her arms out on each side and bent at the elbow as though the killer had posed her in that fashion. The only clothing she was wearing was a black bikini bathing suit bottom. From a cursory examination of the body, the officers discerned right away that the victim had been stabbed multiple times in the upper right quadrant of her chest. The wounds were obvious and encompassed an area of 3 to 4 inches in diameter. Bloodstains were scattered about the victim's body and the floor and walls. By her right hand was a rollerblade boot, and a tennis racket was near her left elbow, items, they eventually learned, that were common to the apartment (see Figure 6.1) (Morland, 1990).

Inside the victim's residence, investigators meticulously gathered more than 100 pieces of physical evidence. Unfortunately, none of the evidence

Figure 6.1 Victim found lying on her back with extensive stab wounds to her chest area. (Photograph courtesy of the San Diego, California Prosecutor's Office.)

would immediately lead police to her killer. Investigators also conducted an exterior search of the surrounding area. On the north side of the building, below the balcony, two shoe impressions were found on the ground about 5 feet from the building, possibly belonging to the killer. That would be all the police would have to go on for the immediate present as they pursued leads into the victim's background and the people she might have come in contact with (Morland, 1990).

Their investigation revealed that Tiffany Schultz was a 20-year-old white female, 5 feet 8 inches tall and weighing 126 pounds, with light brown hair. She was an English major at San Diego State and moonlighted for extra bucks as a nude dancer at Le Girls. A maintenance worker at the apartment complex where Tiffany lived reported having seen her sunbathing on her porch at about noon on the day her body was discovered. Schultz told the worker that she and her boyfriend had been fighting the night before until 11:30 P.M., because he was unhappy with her working at the club. The worker who had engaged in that casual conversation with her was the last person to see Schultz alive.

At autopsy, investigators from Homicide Team #4 were informed by Dr. Christopher Salwell (January 14, 1990), deputy medical examiner of San Diego County, that the victim had been stabbed more than 50 times. It was a gruesome attack by one of the most vicious predators the medical examiner had ever seen. The postmortem examination revealed three localized areas of brutalization. Six severe stab wounds were concentrated on her right anterior neck, with one fatal wound that completely transected the superior right jugular vein just below the level of her jaw; that caused extensive bleeding. The maximum depth of those wounds was 2 inches, well into unprotected tissue.

On her right breast area, more than twenty stab wounds were located in a small, 5 1/2 by 3 3/4-inch horizontal grouping. Those wounds were 14 3/4 inches from the top of her head and 1 to 4 inches right of her anterior midline. At least nine of these wounds, any one of which could have been fatal, perforated her lung. One wound stab wound actually exited the right back region of the victim, which was a ghoulish indicator of just how powerful and well-aimed the killer's blows were. The depth of that stab was calculated at 6 3/4 inches. The other stab wounds that penetrated the back were estimated at 6 to 6 1/2 inches in maximum depth (Salwell, January 14, 1990).

On her upper left chest area, there was a 4 1/2 by 2 3/4 inch grouping of ten stab wounds. Nine of these penetrations extended through her left lung. The maximum depth of those stab wounds was 6 inches. Ten other stab wounds on the front of her body were from 3 to 6 1/2 inches in depth. Blood analyses revealed that Schultz did not have any drugs or alcohol in her system (Salwell, January 14, 1990).

Murder of Janene Marie Weinhold

Only a few blocks from the murder scene of Tiffany Schultz and just over a month after her death, a second vicious stabbing attack on a pretty coed stunned the local residents. Janene Marie Weinhold, a 21-year-old white female political science major at the University of California at San Diego in nearby La Jolla, was supposed to pick up her roommate, Shirley Erickson, from work. Instead, on February 16, 1990, Weinhold didn't show up, so Erickson went to her sister's dormitory room, and both returned to the apartment that Weinhold and Erickson shared together (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

The Buena Vista complex formed a city block of apartments bordered by Dakota Drive on the north, Knapp Street on the south, Waco Street on the east, and Clairemont Drive on the west. The front door of Apartment 4, Weinhold's second-story residence, faced predominately north, even though it was located on the east side of Clairemont drive.

Erickson and her sister arrived at the apartment at about 8:20 P.M. Because Erickson did not have her keys, they summoned a maintenance man to unlock the front door and let them inside. Immediately upon entering, Erickson saw several items on the floor and felt something was wrong. She walked through the apartment calling Weinhold's name. When Shirley passed by her own room, she noticed her door slightly ajar and Weinhold's leg in view on the floor. The violent scene of her roommate's murder caused Shirley to scream, and the maintenance man came to her assistance. Shirley called 911 from the apartment (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

When police investigators arrived at 3301 Clairemont Drive, Apartment 4, they saw red matter that appeared to be blood on the outside of the front door and on the door jamb. They also noted a basket of wet laundry left by the front door, draped over a chair, and on the sofa. As police processed the kitchen area of the crime scene, it appeared to them that the killer had interrupted Weinhold as she was making cookies. There were freshly baked cookies on a plate and also laid out on the counter. Cookie dough was in a bowl, and burnt cookies were found in a small toaster-oven on top of the microwave. Police discovered the murder weapon lying width-wise in the kitchen sink, a bloody knife with a 9-inch blade and a 5-inch wooden handle (see Figure 6.2). It appeared out of place, as though it was intentionally set there for the police to find (Thill, February 22, 1990).

Inside Erickson's bedroom, Janene Weinhold was lying on her back posed with her arms splayed out from her shoulders and her legs spread slightly apart. She was clad only in a black brassiere. Her head was slightly under the bed. Just above her head and on the bed cover were bloodstains of medium velocity spatter, caused by the repeated stabbing motion of the knife entering and being pulled out of the victim's body while she lay there. The blood

Figure 6.2 Knife found in the kitchen sink. (Photograph courtesy of the San Diego, California Prosecutor's Office.)

then whipped off the knife and onto the bedspread, leaving a definite spatter pattern (Thill, February 22, 1990).

Officers observed that the victim was stabbed in the chest numerous times, with the blade penetrating right through her bra on more than a few blows. Under her left arm were a pair of light green pants with black panties twisted within the legs. It appeared the killer pulled both off at the same time in a telltale fashion much like clothing evidence found in forcible rape cases. There was an electrical cord near Weinhold's head, but it was not used. Robbery definitely wasn't the motive, since Weinhold's purse containing money was found in a front room. Again, the local police investigative team was meticulous in its search for clues, with technicians and criminalists carefully lifting any fibers or prints they could find, especially some strands of human hair from Weinhold's left hand. In all, more than 64 pieces of physical evidence were collected from the crime scene. Once again, as in the Schultz murder, police did not discover any evidence at the scene that would lead directly to the identity of Weinhold's attacker (Thill, February 22, 1990).

Weinhold's autopsy was performed the next day by Dr. John Eisele (February 18, 1990) of the San Diego Coroner's Office. Several regions of Weinhold's body sustained multiple groupings of stab wounds. The autopsy report read:

> Over the upper inner quadrant of the right breast centered 50 inches about from her heel and two inches to the right of midline, there is an area with at least eight separate and overlapping stab wounds. The area measures 3 x 2 inches from top to bottom. … Extending over the left breast centered about 50 inches from her heel and 2-1/2 inches to the left of midline, there is a group of eight stab wounds. These are in an area that measures 3-1/2 to 2-1/2 inches. … Over the left pectoral region centered 53 inches above the heel and 5 inches to the left of midline, there is a group of three stab wounds.

Several obvious defense stab wounds were found on Weinhold's hands and arms. Smears and swabs from the vagina, anus, and mouth were retained for cytological and chemical examination. The results of that analysis found "large numbers of tailless and occasional intact spermatozoa present" in the vagina and "rare tailless spermatozoa" were found on the anal smear (Eisele, February 18, 1990).

The summary of anatomic diagnoses was strikingly similar to those of the Schultz homicide. Multiple stab wounds of the chest were the cause of death. The maximum depth of the wounds was 7 inches, and the minimum width of deep wounds was 3/4 inches (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Murder of Holly Tarr

Several days into a southwestern California April, the killer of Tiffany Schultz and Janene Weinhold struck again. On Tuesday, April 3, 1990, the police sirens and red and blue flashing lights once again stirred up the neighborhood of 3410 Cowley Way. This location was only a few blocks away from 3107 Cowley Way, where Tiffany Schultz's murder had taken place just 3 months earlier.

Police had been summoned to Apartment 3, 3410 Cowley, after receiving a radio call of an assault with a deadly weapon. In the front room of Apartment 3, one officer met the maintenance man, who directed the officer to the bedroom where the officer found a female neighbor kneeling over a body and holding a white towel to the victim's chest. The officer pulled the towel off her chest and saw a 1-inch cut about the victim's left breast. The victim was clad only in a pink bra and white panties.

Witnesses were contacted and officers learned that the handyman for the apartments had been called after a woman was heard screaming in Apartment 3. The handyman went to the door and found it locked. He used his master key to unlock the front door but found that the chain lock was in place when he opened the door. He forced the door open, popping the chain, and was confronted by a hooded knife-wielding man the maintenance worker described as a black or Hispanic male with what appeared to be a white bag

over his head. The bag was later identified as a white T-shirt. The unidentified assailant bolted past the handyman and ran toward Dakota Avenue.

Before processing the apartment for evidence, detectives were directed to the north end of the complex where the bright sunny spring day only served to dramatize the contrast between the white T-shirt with vivid red stains lying there on the freshly manicured green grass between a sidewalk and the apartment building. Not far from the T-shirt, another citizen discovered a knife covered with blood on the grass about 10 feet from a sidewalk (see Figure 6.3). It, too, was a grotesque sight because its blade revealed the telltale pattern of blood one finds when it has been withdrawn from the deep tissue of a murder victim's body. The knife was similar in type and size to the one found in the kitchen sink at Janene Weinhold's crime scene. Both the knife and the T-shirt were located along the route the killer used to flee the murder scene. The knife was subsequently identified as belonging to Richard Tarr, the brother of Holly who lived in Apartment 3.

The dumping and leaving of evidence by killers along their escape routes is a common enough occurrence that investigating officers would be remiss if they did not search those possible routes. The location of the T-shirt and knife in this case, and the two shoe impressions found outside Tiffany Schultz's apartment, reaffirmed that searching along possible routes of arrival and escape of the murderer can be beneficial to the investigation.

Figure 6.3 Murder weapon found on the grass outside the victim's apartment. (Photograph courtesy of the San Diego, California Prosecutor's Office.)

The crime scene was on the second story of a two-story complex that houses four apartment units at the Buena Vista Garden Apartments. The police diagram depicts very few blood stains other than those on the victim. A serologist from the San Diego Police Department located small stains on the door leading to the bedroom and on the steps leading up to the apartment. Otherwise, the apartment was blood-free (Thill, 1990, April 9).

Holly Suzanne Tarr, an 18-year-old white female, 5 feet 3 inches tall and weighing 128 pounds, was in town visiting her brother. Upon investigation, police detectives concluded that Holly was stalked from a nearby swimming pool to the apartment. On the hallway floor leading to the bathroom, a yellow and black two-piece bathing suit she had been wearing was found lying near a white terrycloth-type robe, black shorts, and a white T-shirt. It appeared the killer interrupted Holly while she was changing clothes.

The postmortem examination (Salwell, 1990, April 4) on Holly Tarr was not as lengthy as those of the first two victims and corroborated what police detectives and witnesses observed at the scene. Tarr sustained a single stab wound to the left chest, perforating her heart. The depth of that one stab wound reached 7 inches. Tarr could not have fought her assailant much, because she did not have the recognizable marks of defense-type wounds. Her vaginal, oral, and anal smears were negative for spermatozoa, unlike the autopsy findings in the Janene Weinhold murder (Salwell, 1990, April 4). One reason for the dissimilarity could be that the killer was interrupted. But as we will see in the signature analyses of these cases, the actual evidence of rape is not a necessary ingredient for the killer's satisfactions.

Murder of Elissa Keller

The residents of the Clairemont area were not relieved when the news reported that the killer, obviously now on a serial spree, had struck in a different neighborhood of San Diego on May 21, 1990. The first officers arrived at 5225 Trojan Avenue, Apartment 21 at 11:47 P.M. They were summoned to that location regarding a possible death. What they found was the fourth victim of the Clairemont Killer (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

While en route, a police communications operator advised the responding officers that the victim's daughter had come home to find her mother covered with blood on the bedroom floor. Upon arrival, officers discovered the front door wide open and an 18-year-old female sitting on the living room couch sobbing, very upset, and still holding a telephone. Two officers stayed with the young woman, who they learned was the victim's daughter, while two went to the southeast bedroom where they saw Elissa Keller, a 38-year-old white female, lying on her back, head to the north and feet to the south, parallel to a bed. A checkered blanket covered her body. The responding officer focused his flashlight beam directly into the victim's eyes and, seeing no

pupillary reflex and not picking up a pulse or breathing, noted that she was probably dead. Later, as the officer removed the blanket, he could clearly see two severe stab wounds on the victim's chest. This confirmed that officers knew they were faced with number 187 PC of the California Penal Code: homicide (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Keller's daughter told officers that at about 11:30 P.M. she decided to return home. When she unlocked the front door with her key, she noticed the deadbolt was also unlocked, uncommon for this late at night. She walked inside and smelled a funny odor that didn't smell like her home. Walking through the apartment to her bedroom, she saw, in the dim light shining through her window, some of her belongings scattered all over her bed. Then she turned on her lights and noticed blood spots all over the top of her bed. She looked down and saw her mother's feet and a blood-soaked bedsheet covering her mother's face. She then ran out of the bedroom and called the police (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Investigation revealed that most of the stabbing to the victim occurred on top of her daughter's bed (see Figure 6.4). The light pink bedspread was covered with patches of deep bloodstains on those portions nearest the door. An electric hair curler, comb, and other articles were also on the bed. It was unknown if any had been used in the murder (Degelder, 1990, May 25).

Elissa Keller was lying directly below the bed clad only in a white tank top soaked with blood, giving the untrained eye the impression that the shirt was red. Her legs were slightly spread. The killer moved and manipulated her body because her legs, arms, face, and chest were covered in blood. Lying on the victim's right abdominal area were two earring-type hooks (Degelder, 1990, May 25).

Detectives followed the path of the killer after the murder. They discovered several bloodstains in the bathroom, one on the floor, another on a tissue container located on the counter, another inside the sink, and a final one located on a hair discovered also on the floor. Outside the apartment, a bloodstain was recovered from a stairway railing leading away from the victim's residence (Degelder, 1990, May 25).

The autopsy findings (Salwell, 1990, May 23) in Elissa Keller's homicide case were similar to the findings of the Schultz and Weinhold murders, showing a discrete grouping of stab wounds. Within a 5 by 2-inch area of the mid to left upper chest and slightly above her left nipple, there was a grouping of nine stab wounds. One perforated through and through the descending aorta and ended near the spine. The stab wounds penetrated deeply, with the deepest measuring 6 1/2 inches. Unlike Holly Tarr, Keller was able to put up a fight. She had contusions on her arms as well as multiple superficial cut wounds to her forearms and hands.

Figure 6.4 Top of victim's bed where the initial stabbing took place. (Photograph courtesy of the San Diego, California Prosecutor's Office.)

Murders of Pamela and Amber Clark

With the discovery of two bodies on September 13, 1990, the San Diego's mood became more fearful and apprehensive. By now, homicide experts declared that serial murders were in progress and more murders were inevitable unless the killer was stopped. One couldn't miss the headlines in California newspapers, for example, "Eerie Serial Killings Have San Diego Women on Edge" (*Los Angeles Times*, September 21, 1990).

September 13th was a typical late-summer San Diego day, sunny and clear and 85 degrees. A warm ocean breeze was blowing across the bay from the Navy yard. Joseph Lazzaro, Pamela Clark's husband, left for work at 8:15 A.M. By 11:00 that morning, Pamela had not yet shown up for work at Joe's doctor's office, where Joe was supposed to meet her. Joe became concerned and called Vickie Kempf, a family friend, to ask her to drive over to their house to make sure everything was okay. When Kempf arrived at 5890 Honors Drive, she found the front door unlocked and slightly ajar. Kempf pushed the door open and immediately observed Pamela Clark lying on the entryway floor. She gently touched one of Pamela's feet. It was cold and confirmed in Kempf's mind that Pamela was probably already dead. Kempf went to the kitchen, grabbed the cordless phone, and called 911.

Detective R. Thill was busy investigating other murders in San Diego when he received a call at 1:30 P.M. to proceed to the scene because the modus operandi (M.O.) at the Clark residence was strikingly similar to that of the Clairemont murders from earlier in the year. The single story, four-bedroom and two-bath house sat at the southwest corner of Honors Drive and Fried Avenue in the community of Universal City. The yard was protected by a wooden fence, 5 feet high on the north and 6 feet high on the west and south sides. It was a secure, private residence.

Thill (1990, September 17) meticulously examined the premises and located the killer's apparent exit point, the east window of the dining room. Lying on the ground slightly to the west of the patio was a bent window screen that had come from the dining room. The sliding glass window of the dining room was slightly ajar. Underneath and outside the window on the ground was a wooden stick, the length of which verified that it was commonly used to secure the sliding glass window from the inside. At the rear of the house was a sliding glass door facing west. That door and its screen were partially open, but the drapes were pulled shut. Unless one jumps the fence, there is no escape through the back yard, as it is entirely enclosed by fencing. The front door to the house has a deadbolt lock and a doorknob lock, neither of which were activated.

Pamela Clark, a 48-year-old white female was savagely stabbed where the linoleum-covered entryway met the carpeted hallway. Nude, she lay on her back, her legs slightly spread, with her knees about 3 inches apart. Her

buttocks and upper torso were on the carpet with her arms spread out at 90-degree angles to her body. Her hair was wet, as if she had just gotten out of the shower. Concentrated mostly above her left breast were numerous stab wounds in much the same fashion as that of the previous victims of the Clairemont killer. Blood spatters from those wounds were located on her neck, chest, abdomen, and legs (Thill, 1990, September 17) (see Figure 6.5).

At autopsy (Blackbourne, 1990, September 14), it was discovered that Pamela had suffered eleven stab wounds to the chest and four to the right thigh. On the upper portion of her left breast, the eleven stab wounds were clustered in a area that measured 3.5 inches and 4.5 inches transversely. Five stab wounds penetrated her heart and two entered her left lung. Four of her stab wounds were so deep, from 7 to 10 inches, that they penetrated through her back. She sustained one defense cut on her left index finger. Just to the south of Pamela's head was a wooden-handled knife with a blade that was 10 1/2 inches long. This was the third murder scene where the killer had left the murder weapon.

As detectives made their way down the hallway, they discovered blood-stains on the hallway carpet and walls. At the south end of the hallway lay the body of Amber Clark, Pamela's 18-year-old daughter, a student at Mesa College, where her instructor had already noted her absent from her 11:00

Figure 6.5 Victim Pamela Clark was found on the hallway floor with the murder weapon pointing toward her head. Victim sustained eleven stab wounds to the left chest area. (Photograph courtesy of the San Diego, California Prosecutor's Office.)

A.M. class. Dressed differently from her mother, Amber was wearing light-colored coverall-type shorts and a white blouse. Her blouse, bra, and the bib portion of her coveralls had been pulled down, exposing her breasts. Again, there were stab wounds in her chest area (Thill, 1990, September 17).

At autopsy (Blackbourne, 1990, September 14), it was found that Amber had eleven stab wounds to her upper left chest, like her mother. Four inches below her left shoulder and above her breast were nine stab wounds clustered together. The entry wounds on the outer surface of her body varied from ¾ to ⅞ inches in length. Her heart sustained two penetrating stab wounds and her left lung eight perforating stab wounds. In addition, one penetrating stab wound was found at the lateral tip of the left lobe of her liver. Six of the penetrating stab wounds to her chest were 7 to 8 inches deep. So vicious were two of the stabs that they penetrated through her back. Her left arm was parallel to her body, but her right arm was bent at the elbow, with her forearm and hand resting on her right side and breast. She had a superficial laceration on her right thumb, which was described as a defense wound.

There were bloodstains on the bathroom walls, floor, tub, and on a towel on the floor next to the bathtub, as if one of the victims had been confronted by the killer in the bathroom area. There was a damp towel in the bathroom sink. Lying on the floor of the bathroom was a broken knife blade. The rest of the knife was found in the northernmost top drawer of the cabinets in the dining room. Detectives surmised that the killer had re-armed himself. Processing for physical evidence took place over a 4-day period, but information leading directly to the Clairemont killer could not be found (Thill, 1990, September 17).

Signature Analysis

The materials provided by San Diego District Attorney's office indicated that the killer's M.O., the conditions of how the murders were committed, remained fairly consistent throughout the six murders. The first three victims were killed in the Clairemont area. Then the killer changed areas and moved to the University City neighborhood in east San Diego, not a great distance to travel for an accomplished serial killer. This killer demonstrated that he was an experienced daytime burglar, as he attacked most of his victims between 10 o'clock in the morning and 2 o'clock in the afternoon and entered through open or unlocked doors. He showed a preference for a knife as a weapon. He attacked white female victims indoors, and, more specifically, in their own homes. Initially, the killer attacked a cluster of victims near each other. In fact, those murders took place surreptitiously in second-story apartments. Then he changed to a house as he became more and more confident in entering any type of residence.

These victims were not victims of chance, but victims of choice. They were stalked. As Ted Bundy once said, "The victim does not know the killer, but the killer knows the victim" (Unpublished Bundy Interview with Robert Keppel, 1988, February 22). The killer had to know who his victims were because they had to match his preferred victim type, and, most of all, he had to have knowledge, at least for the first four, that they were home alone. To attack women in their own homes in broad daylight assumes a level of intelligence and daring far beyond the normal criminal mind. There is too much risk of being seen, as was the case in the Holly Tarr murder, where the killer was interrupted during his act. But that one interruption did not deter the killer.

Despite minor changes in the killer's M.O., his psychological imprint or signature was clearly detectable. Each victim was posed in a sexually degrading position, intentionally left that way so the discovery of the bodies would startle the people who found them. The victims were not concealed or hidden away, but placed in locations where they would be easily discovered. The positioning of each of their victims reflected the cruel reality of the killer, his total mastery over their bodies. All were stretched out on their backs, completely nude or in partial underclothing with either a bra or panties, or both. They were all positioned supine with the back of their heads against the floor. The pleasure for the killer was demonstrating each victim's vulnerability by leaving them openly displayed, some with legs spread and others with their arms left out perpendicular to their sides or over their heads, as though offering a sign of perverted submission far more than necessary to commit the murders.

The core of the killer's signature in this series was revealed by a unique form of sexual expression, the manner in which he ritualistically stabbed each of his victims. This killer evolved along a sexually sadistic arc of behavior that was embodied in the violence of eroticized power displayed through picquerism and the supporting secondary deviances, past and emergent. In preparation for the murders, despite the ability to perform "normal" primary sexual acts with a consenting adult, this picquer emerged from a learning experience in deviancy in which secondary mechanisms came into prominence only to be absorbed and the knowledge faded away. Again, the killer's primary goal is satisfaction through eroticized power expressed as violence, not an ejaculation with fantasized love. In other words, the killer was not there to rape the women he killed, he became stimulated through the violence he inflicted; any sexual satisfaction occurred after he left the murder scene. Functionally, there is no direct sexual expression for this control-type concept-driven killer, whose obvious primary deviancy is picquerism. However, this was a killer who had evolved from previous forms of deviancy in which he might have had direct sexual expression at a crime scene, and he evidenced this by his display of residual past satisfactions of bondage through

his arrangement of cords and submission–domination through the positioning of the victim. In other words, the experienced signature investigator got not only a picture of what the killer was doing as he worked out his arc of violence on the victim but a snapshot of what used to arouse him directly and how that still was used as a stratum of the signature. None of this was about the victim, it was all about what aroused the killer (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

The killer was also showing the beginning work for his next stage of violence. In this process of translating sophisticated fantasies into reality, the killer acquired a sense of mastery and control over his victims and himself. The easier it became to stalk and identify his victim, enter the property in broad daylight, isolate the victim, and spend as much time as necessary with her at the murder scene, the greater the violence he had to perform to satisfy himself afterward. Everything he accomplished, however, was only undone by the extinguishing factor of the learning curve that wasn't providing him enough satisfaction for his efforts. Therefore, by choice, he would feel driven to move further across the violence continuum to a higher stage, which could very well have been the harvesting of body parts. But he was caught before he could experiment (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Before the murders, he avoided his fears through fantasy, but the execution of each murder sent the Clairemont killer beyond his fantasies and met his demand for dominance and power. Each murder became a forum for a greater performance and drive. Although his second victim had semen in her vagina and anus, this single event indicated that the killer was experimenting with a picqueristic augmentation that did not prove satisfactory. The penis could not replace the knife for satisfaction. Therefore, he discarded the possibly learned behaviors of the past—penile insertion during violence—for the direct and unfailing potency of the knife blade (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

The Clairemont murders were typified by localized areas of brutalization or stabbing, especially to the left breast area of each victim. Inasmuch as the vagina is "sexual," the killer may have chosen the breast for the compatibility between secondary sexual characteristics and his own secondary mechanisms, the sensuality of driving a blade through human tissue. In addition, he may have learned that the breast fat shifted when pushed aside by the knife blade and provided him a sensation of deeper penetration. Likely, the bounce and cushion of the breast simply maximized his interest and energy levels. Noting that his interest areas were exclusive to the breasts and heart regions, the amount of violence is an indicator of efficiency of performance versus the satisfaction of his needs. When his needs superseded his level of performance, the number of victims increased, his timing increased, or his sexual deviancy increased (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Beginning with his first victim and carrying through to subsequent victims, the killer specifically focused his stabbing to the chest area. Unlike murders in which the killer stabs in a haphazard fashion, these murders,

from the first victim, Tiffany Schultz, through the last victims, the Clarks, were characterized by the symbolic thrashing and sexual exploitation of each victim's left breast area (Douglas, 1993). There was no frenzied nature to the attack, a random infliction of wounds, or a slashing of the victims' throats. The killer's specific set of actions to the left breast area was something he couldn't change because it provided him too much satisfaction, and, therefore, he always left his victims in a state of intentional irony or sadistic ridicule (Keppel & Birnes, 1993).

In addition to the location of the wounds, another part of this killer's primary signature was the position and depth of the wounds. In many sexually related murders with knives, it is noteworthy that the killer stabs to a depth normally perceived as erectile penis length. The blades of the knives used by the killer in the murders measured between 9 and 10½ inches in length and made the killer more fearsome and unyielding in the eyes of each victim. This killer was obsessed with the stimulation of penetrating the victims. The Clairemont killer did not tease with superficial cuts, but stabbed with deep penetration. In a fit of learned and unfettered aggression, the killer sank his chosen blade to the extreme depths. The deepest wounds on each of the six victims ranged from 6 to 9 inches, with some so deep that the killer rendered the flesh off their backs by stabbing from the front. The deep stabbing coupled with the clusters of ritualized entry wounds were evidence of a satiation of power to dehumanize the victims and control every moment of their ultimate destruction (Douglas, 1993).

It was remarkable that hiding the murder weapon after each killing was not a priority with this killer. Some killers are careful to remove all the weapons and implements used to commit their crimes. But in this series, the killer left knives at the scenes of three of the murders. Clearing the crime scene of murder weapons was not important for this killer. Even more remarkable was that in the last two murders, the killer broke one knife and replaced it with another, and left both at the scene. In a final act of bravado, the killer laid a knife about 1 foot from the head of Pamela Clark and in a position where it was pointing at her head, a sure sign of ceremonial dominance for all to see. However, since the killer left the victims displayed and posed for post-offense satisfaction, the leaving of the weapons matched in kind. As in a rape case, it is like leaving a picture of his penis to document the offending weapon, the ultimate arrogance and sarcastic irony. In addition, consistent with display of his victims, the killer was sending a message to police, "Catch me if you can, sucker." Finally, from a practical point of view after the murder, the taking of knives from the crime scene to a hiding spot or home risked the killer's discovery because he might be caught with them at a future time (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Evidence against Cleophus Prince

After the sixth murder, the trail of the killer was as cold as a day of ice fishing in Minnesota. As intense as the police investigation was, it led nowhere. Four months after the murders of Pamela and Amber Clark, the first positive lead materialized in February 1991. Geralynd Venverloth returned home from the Family Fitness Center where she worked. What she didn't realize was that she had been followed home by a stalking killer. Heading toward her bathroom shower, she heard the noise of the knob on the front door jiggling back and forth. She peered through the peephole and saw a man wedging himself against the door while trying to pry the lock with something. Just before the man was able to force his way in, Venverloth was able to lock the deadbolt. The man got away before police arrived.

Charla Lewis was a coworker of Venverloth at the Family Fitness Center. Much to Venverloth's surprise, one day she saw the same man she observed through the peephole drop off Lewis at the Fitness Center. Through Venverloth's keen observations, police investigators arrested Cleophus Prince for the charge of attempted burglary of Venverloth's apartment. Prince was released on his own recognizance because the police did not have the evidence to hold him for the murders.

The police quickly began to investigate the theory that the Clairemont killer stalked several victims who had come directly from workouts at various fitness centers. After these women arrived home, they were slain after showering or preparing to shower at the time of the attacks. The circumstantial evidence in the case against Cleophus Prince, Jr., a 25-year-old black male, began to build.

At the initial search of Prince's 1982 Chevrolet Cavalier, detectives found several knives on the floorboard. When they searched his wallet, they found a card for an automatic teller machine. The card had a small defect on it, and police detectives believed the defect was caused by slipping the card in the locking devices on windows and doors, a common technique for entering homes used by wily burglars.

In tracing Prince's travels, investigators found out that he had been discharged from the Navy in January 1990 and moved into the Buena Vista Apartments in the Clairemont area of San Diego. Then, after he had already began his murderous rampage by killing three women in nearby apartments, Prince moved in May 1990 to eastern San Diego into an apartment with his girlfriend, Charla Lewis. It was within one block of the house occupied by Elissa Keller, Prince's fourth victim, who was found stabbed to death the next month. The murders near Prince's primary place of residence showed once again that serial killers operate in the surroundings with which they are familiar. Prince was extremely familiar with his own neighborhoods.

In September 1990, Prince joined the same health club that Pamela Clark frequented. Homicide detectives suspected that Prince watched Pamela Clark leave the health club, followed her, and broke into her home. At one point, police discovered that Prince had bragged to a friend that he wanted to kill a mother and daughter. Witnesses later told police that they observed Prince wearing Pamela Clark's wedding ring on a chain after the murder.

The most crucial evidence against Cleophus Prince was a DNA match between his genetic material and the semen found on the victim's clothing at the scene of the murder of Janene Weinhold, the only victim where detectives found evidence of sexual activity in the form of ejaculate (State v. Prince, 1992). After his arrest in February 1991, Prince agreed to provide blood and saliva samples. The samples were sent to the now famous Cellmark Diagnostics in Maryland, and, in March 1991, Cellmark officials informed the San Diego Police detectives that the DNA profile of Cleophus Prince matched the semen sample. DNA scientists testified that the chance of getting a match in a random sample is one in several million. But the ejaculate found at the Janene Weinhold murder poses a question: Why were there no signs of sexual assault on any of the victims other than Weinhold?

The answer is complicated, but it makes sense. Prince displayed his control over the scene by enjoying the entire process of the act, which may or may not have included and overtly exhibited sexual assault. Experiences from the previous serial killers show that the sexual experience can be delayed until a later time, and, at any subsequent murder scene. In fact, the more control the killer exerts over the victim, the more likely it is that the killer's immediate interest in a sexual assault is replaced by his anger and need for overwhelming control. He exerts so much control that he's able to enjoy his sexual release much later when he is completely private.

Based on the DNA evidence, detectives obtained a search warrant for Prince's apartment. They soon discovered that Prince had fled to his hometown of Birmingham, Alabama. But while at the apartment, they turned up their first evidence linking Prince to Holly Tarr, Prince's third victim. It was an unusually styled 14-karat gold ring given to Charla Lewis by Prince. Prince gave a trinket of his perverted accomplishments to his girlfriend. The ring was identified by Tarr's father as the one he had given her for her 16th birthday. Police investigators ascertained from the manufacturer of the ring that just 63 similar rings had been made in that style. None were ever distributed in California.

Detectives located Prince and he was arrested in Birmingham on March 3, 1991. At his family's home, they found another ring that belonged to Elissa Keller and the shoes that matched the shoe impressions found outside the residences of several stabbing victims.

Ultimately, investigators developed evidence that Prince was the perpetrator of six murders and twenty-one burglaries that followed the pattern of

the murders. Deputy District Attorney Dan Lamborn (1993) in his closing argument at trial said, "This was not just some burglar being caught by surprise. This was someone with a purpose, a sexually perverted purpose. He liked to see blood flowing from the breasts of women." Cleophus Prince was convicted of special circumstances murder under California law and given the death penalty at the sentencing phase of his trial.

References

Blackbourne, B. D. (1990, September 14). Autopsy report—Amber M. Clark, San Diego, CA: Office of the Medical Examiner: San Diego County.

Blackbourne, B. D. (1990, September 14). Autopsy report—Pamela G. Clark, San Diego, CA: Office of the Medical Examiner: San Diego County.

Degelder, T. (1990, May 25). Investigator's report (Case No. 90-060267), San Diego, CA: San Diego Police Department.

Douglas, J. E. (1993, February 17). Trial transcript of the testimony of John E. Douglas, San Diego, CA: *State v. Cleophus Prince*.

Eisele, J. W. (1990, February 18). Autopsy report—Janene M. Weinhold, San Diego, CA: Office of the Medical Examiner: San Diego County.

Geberth, V. J. (2006). *Practical Homicide Investigation: Tactics, Procedures, and Forensic Techniques*. Boca Raton, FL: CRC Press.

Keppel, R. D. & Birnes, W. J. (1997). *Signature Killers*. NY: Pocket Books.

Lamborn, D. (1993). Trial Transcript of Closing Arguments, San Diego, CA: *State v. Cleophus Prince*.

Morland, L. C. (1990, January 23). Investigator's report (Case No. 90-005420), San Diego, CA: San Diego Police Department.

Platte, M. & Granberry, M. (1990, September 21). *Los Angeles Times*, Los Angeles, CA.

Salwell, C. (1990, January 14). Autopsy report—Tiffany P. Schultz, San Diego, CA: Office of the Medical Examiner: San Diego County.

Salwell, C. (1990, April 4). Autopsy report—Holly S. Tarr, San Diego, CA: Office of the Medical Examiner: San Diego County.

Salwell, C. (1990, May 23). Autopsy report—Elissa N. Keller, San Diego, CA: Office of the Medical Examiner: San Diego County.

State of California v. Cleophus Prince. (1992). 9 CAL.APP.4th 1176, 10 CAL.RPTR.2D 855.

Thill, R. E. (1990, February 22). Investigator's report (Case No. 90-020465), San Diego, CA: San Diego Police Department.

Thill, R. E. (1990, April 9). Investigator's report (Case No. 90-040557), San Diego, CA: San Diego Police Department.

Thill, R. E. (1990, September 17). Investigator's report (Case Nos. 90-107252 & 90-107255), San Diego, CA: San Diego Police Department.

A Sexual Assault Signature Lacking Primary Mechanisms

7

Steven Pennell Cases

Serial killers, leaving their signatures at crime scenes and on victims, have roamed around everywhere and are certainly not the exclusive province of the Pacific Northwest, New York, California, or Louisiana. As serial killers seek their victims, they're always in motion because that's how they come upon murder sites, victim pools, and body dump sites. Even those who operate in circumscribed areas, such as George Russell and Nathaniel Code, are always on the move, and that's one of the signature hallmarks of their lifestyles. So it's no surprise that even tiny Delaware became a killing zone when Steven Pennell left his mark by torturing and killing several women.

The Steven Pennell cases marked the first time that John Douglas (1989, October 5) of the FBI's Behavioral Sciences Unit appeared as an expert on the signature aspects of a killer when he testified about the rarity of certain types of wounds to a female body. He talked about the brutality of the killer when he said that even though the infliction of various wounds to each victim was different, the fact remains that the victims were alive when they received those wounds, and this was central to the killer's signature. The torturing of victims requires "a very unique individual," he testified, "who wants to keep his victims alive during the assault." Agent Douglas understood, as few people can, the very precise meaning of torturing live victims and what that says about a killer such as Pennell. The central theme in the Pennell cases was anger, and not necessarily sexual assault. The absence of the primary mechanisms of sexual assault (penile penetration and ejaculation)—satisfaction and gratification—was significant. It tells investigators that they are looking for a guy who's working through an arc of anger, not a guy who's looking to have an orgasm all over a pleading victim.

Murder of Shirley Annette Ellis

The series of murders in Delaware began with the homicide of Shirley Ellis. On November 29, 1987, two teenagers were looking for a place to park at about 9:25 P.M. It was the Sunday after Thanksgiving, and as an East Coast chill drove across Delaware Bay, the pair cruised onto a construction site off Albee Road, a pretty rough area and desolate after dark, which was located

Figure 7.1 Area behind the Iron Industrial Site and U.S. Route 40. (Photograph courtesy of the Delaware State Police.)

behind the Iron Industrial Park in Newark, Delaware. Instead of finding a place to park, they found the body of a defiled murder victim (see Figure 7.1) (Swiski, 1988).

As they drove onto the site, they found the victim's body, openly observable to passersby, approximately 3 to 4 feet off an unfinished roadway. Partially clad and left there in the open in a position that could only be interpreted as sexually degrading, the victim was lying on her back with her aqua-blue pants pulled down all the way to her ankles, her blue denim jacket and shirt pulled open, and her white brassiere cut in front, leaving her breasts exposed (see Figure 7.2) (Swiski, 1988).

Ligature strangulation marks were clearly visible on her neck and the garroting evidence of binding was etched in dried blood and bruises into her wrists and ankles. In addition, the victim had a piece of black duct tape stuck in her hair. Had it been used to cover her mouth and stuck to the strands of hair when the killer ripped it off? Investigators quickly surmised that the victim had been killed elsewhere and dumped where she was found. It was also apparent that the victim was not at the body discovery scene for any extended period.

Shirley Annette Ellis, a white female born on July 7, 1964, had been seen for the last time that same evening at 5:55 P.M. walking along U.S. Route 40 at the entrance to Brookmont Farms heading toward Wilmington to visit a sick friend in the hospital. She was carrying a Thanksgiving platter of food for

Figure 7.2 Body of Pennell's first victim, Shirley Ellis. (Photograph courtesy of the Delaware State Police.)

the friend. Shirley was a known prostitute and drug user who frequented the high-traffic Route 13 and Route 40 corridor, a key network of support roads near the dense Northeast interstates carrying traffic among New York City, Philadelphia, Baltimore, and Washington, DC. She was a walker and hitchhiker, thumbing rides from whoever pulled up alongside, which is exactly what she was doing when last seen. Her body was found approximately 4 miles from where she was last seen and approximately 3 miles from where her killer, Steven Pennell, lived (Swiski, 1988).

Under the supervision of Dr. Jonathan Arden of the Delaware State Medical Examiner's Office, an autopsy was performed on November 30, 1987, in Wilmington, Delaware. Dr. Arden's conclusions (1987) were that Shirley Ellis suffered nipple mutilation to one breast; she had been bound at the feet and ankles; she had three distinctive cylindrical blows to the head—the mark of a hammer—there were no signs of sexual assault, but she had been tortured before death, which the medical examiner was able to determine from the presence of antemortem injuries. It seemed clear that the killer had been out to inflict pain on a suffering, terrified victim rather than act out his rage on a dead victim. The cause of death was ruled to be blunt-force trauma to the head as well as ligature strangulation.

Analysis of the Shirley Ellis Murder

Shirley Ellis's murder case contained several distinctive features that were rarely found in any murder investigations. When examiners sift through evidence, the way experienced homicide detectives do, they look for those characteristics of murder that are considered rare and unusual, over and beyond what the killer did to commit a routine murder. This way one can predict whether the killer will strike again. In addition, experts look for the goal of the killer, which is evidence of conquest, achieved through the actual physical mechanism of control and expressed as a series of actions that exact and exert control, and potent rituals that reinforce the thrill of mastery long after the crime has been committed (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

The Ellis murder had three such unique and significant characteristics, which, when taken collectively, are not found in other murders and reflect that mastery. The first unique feature was that Ellis was bound by unknown devices before death and that the binding implements were removed after the killer was finished. Obviously, the more terror the victim feels, the more heightened and intense the experience for the killer. The thing to remember about bondage is that it is also a form of ritualistic control when it's an actual primary part of the crime and not just a means to restrain victims from escaping or turning on their attackers. As a simple functional restraint to prevent escape, bondage is a secondary aspect of the crime. In addition to the abrasion-type evidence of bondage present on Ellis's wrists and ankles, there were also ligature strangulation marks on her neck. The killer in the Ellis case restricted the victim's movement while she was living as a part of the ritualistic phase of the crime. This was a display of the killer's need to control a living victim so as to build up the anticipation of becoming sexually gratified. Bondage killers also play out the tension of keeping the victim alive and in restraint. In this case also, the killer moved Ellis from bondage through torture, through to, finally, humiliation (Douglas 1989; Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

The second unique component of Ellis's murder was overkill. As the cases in previous chapters have shown, overkill involves multiple causes of death, any one of which could have been the proximate reason for the death. For instance, in the Ellis case, the ligature strangulation could have killed her as well as the three hammer-like blows she received to the top of her head. Undoubtedly, this type of overkill signified an organized effort that simply was necessary to satisfy the killer's angst. It didn't really matter to the assailant what actually killed his victim. His anger was too intense, so intense that he was almost robotic, acting out a sequence of demands regardless of whether the victim actually suffered from the coup de grace in each mechanism of death within the series of events that took place at the murder site. Nothing evidences the killer's hatred for his victim more than an overkill

that progresses or escalates from crime to crime. And we would expect that the next victim of this killer would demonstrate additional hatred characteristics (Douglas, 1989; Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

The third significant characteristic of murder was the absence of ejaculate. Ellis's killer was a highly sophisticated sadist whose entire method of gratification involved the process of control. He enjoyed accomplishing control over his victim so much that he saved his sexual expression for later. In addition, the presence of overkill meant that the violence was more important than the sexual gratification and that the personality of the victim herself was not the important aspect of the crime. In fact, it was only her unfortunate fate to have been there at just the right time that made her a victim. It was the commission of excessively violent acts that drove the emotion of the killer, who might also be trying to kill a form of control over himself that he perceives the victim-type being able to exercise. The absence of ejaculate and the presence of pattern-type injuries around Ellis's upper right breast are significant. The sadistic biting of her breast satisfied the killer's increasing lust for domination, control, and possession as well as his almost feral need to inflict a physically disfiguring wound with instruments as intimate as his lips, tongue, and teeth (Douglas 1989; Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

The most extraordinary finding about bondage, overkill, and the absence of sexual assault was that for all three factors to be present in the same murder is truly a rare phenomenon. The Delaware police would soon have another case.

Vernon Geberth in his book *Practical Homicide Investigation* (2006) summarized the Ellis murder as an example of a "female, sadistically tortured and killed … the body is partially clothed, but has been arranged so as to expose the breasts and vagina. The homicide was the first in a series of killings by a sadistic sexual psychopath. The body has been purposefully displayed by the offender."

Murder of Catherine Ann DiMauro

Catherine Ann DiMauro, a white female born December 26, 1956, was last seen on June 28, 1988 at 11:30 P.M., as she was dropped off by a friend at the entrance to her home at the Greenfield Manor Apartments after being picked up hitchhiking along U.S. Route 40 in the area of Route 896. More than 7 months had passed since the body of Shirley Ellis had been discovered. Like Ellis, DiMauro's main mode of transportation was walking or hitchhiking, and she was known as a former lunchwagon driver with a police record of prostitution arrests (Swiski, 1988).

The next day at about 6:15 in the morning, workers arriving at the Fox Run home construction site located off of U.S. Route 40 at Route 72 found the body of DiMauro. It was lying on the edge of a dirt access road in plain view, just like the body of Shirley Ellis, openly displayed and in a position

Figure 7.3 DiMauro's body recovery location off Route 40. (Photograph courtesy of the Delaware State Police.)

where she would quickly be found by any passersby (see Figure 7.3). As in the Ellis case, it didn't appear that any type of assault had taken place at the body recovery site because the killer's activities would have been recorded in the smooth dirt surface. DiMauro was simply left there in the open to decompose or wait to be found. However, because of the ideal smooth dirt surface, the tire impressions on the road were very clear to investigators and would later come in handy when it was time to match them to the tires on the suspect's vehicle. Investigators concluded that these had all the prima facie indicators of a series because both bodies were dumped where they were found, and both victims were killed elsewhere (Swiski, 1988).

Unlike Shirley Ellis, DiMauro was completely nude, lying on her back. None of her clothing was ever found at the crime scene. Both arms were positioned at right angles to her sides and one leg was bent back at the knee. A watch was still secured to her left wrist. At first, it appeared to investigators that the killer had stripped the victim clean of any physical evidence. But, like black tape found in the hair of Shirley Ellis, a piece of gray duct tape was discovered in the hair of Catherine DiMauro. In addition, this time there were blue fibers covering her body from head to toe (Swiski, 1988).

The autopsy report (Arden, 1988, June 29) of DiMauro could have easily been construed as Ellis's, as they were both so much alike. DiMauro sustained abrasions around her hands and ankles, as if she had been bound at one time and then the killer had removed the bindings (see Figure 7.4). The familiar

Figure 7.4 Scar from binding on victim's left ankle. (Photograph courtesy of the Delaware State Police.)

signs of ligature strangulation marks were present about her neck. Exactly like Ellis, three distinctive cylindrical blows (hammer-like) were struck to DiMauro's head. The final diagnosis for DiMauro read like that of Ellis:

1. Strangulation (ligature mark of neck and petechiae of conjunctivae)
2. Blunt head trauma (lacerations of the right temporal, parietal, and occipital scalp; depressed skull fracture with linear extension to the anterior base of the skull; subarachnoid hemorrhage, mild; and facial abrasions and contusions)
3. Contusions and abrasions of the right breast and scattered contusions and abrasions of extremities and trunk
4. Contusions of the buttocks

Police Take the Offensive

The investigators had a series on their hands, and they moved into action accordingly.

On July 1, 1988, the police went public by acknowledging they had begun looking into similarities between the Ellis and DiMauro killings. Unbeknownst to the public and as consequence of the two murders, the police began a decoy operation along a highway corridor that the victims and other prostitutes were known to frequent. As part of the operation, female

police officers wearing hidden microphones were dressed as prostitutes and engaged in conversations with men who stopped for them. The officers were not permitted to enter the vehicles of these men, but if the occasion arose, they would reach inside any vehicles with blue carpets and remove carpet samples (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

On August 28, 1988, the ongoing investigation into the likelihood of a serial killer on the loose along the Route 40 corridor was rocked with the disappearance of yet another prostitute, named Margaret Finner, an 18-year-old white female. Finner was standing along the roadway soliciting clients. She was last seen at 11:30 P.M. getting into a windowless blue van with rounded headlights that was heading south on U.S. Route 13. An eyewitness described the operator only as a white male. Finner was reported missing by her parents, with whom she lived. This information was incorporated by police into their investigation and decoy operation (Swiski, 1988). Finner was eventually found murdered, but prosecutors thought there was insufficient evidence linking their eventual suspect, Steven Pennell, to the crime (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Then came a break in the case from the decoy operation the Delaware authorities had deployed along the corridor. On September 14, 1988, almost a year after Ellis was discovered, Officer Renee Lano, working decoy along Route 40, saw a blue van cruise past her seven times as if it were stalking her. Officer Lano called in the tag number of the van and learned that it was registered to Steven Pennell. Thinking possibly that she had a strike on her line, Lano moved to a darker area of Route 40 in the hopes of luring the stalking blue van into stopping. It worked. The driver stopped for her. From the front seat, a man motioned for Lano to enter the van. She approached, but did not enter the vehicle. Instead, she spoke with the driver, later identified as Steven Pennell, engaging him in a casual, but distanced, conversation. Her suspicions became aroused and she took a good look inside the van, thinking that she might be talking with either a suspect or someone who knew who the killer might be. Then, she was stunned at the sight of the bright blue carpeting covering the interior of the man's van. Was this blue carpet, now almost blinking at her from the van, the source of the same blue fibers found covering DiMauro's body? Could she be staring into the actual vehicle that had whisked away three women from these very same streets? Without tipping off the driver, Lano surreptitiously reached inside the van and pulled at the carpet, removing some of the fibers (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Missing Person Kathleen Anne Meyer

Before any arrests could be made, there were still more victims. The disappearance of Kathleen Meyer, a white female born March 24, 1962, led investigators to believe that she was probably a victim of the same killer who had murdered Ellis and DiMauro. Kathleen Meyer was last seen walking toward

Route 40 from her residence on Saturday, September 18, 1988, at 9:30 P.M., 4 days after Officer Lano had made contact with what she believed might be the suspect vehicle. Later that evening, an off-duty Wilmington Police Officer observed a white female, possibly Meyer, enter Steven Pennell's blue Ford van (Delaware license number RV2059). The frustrating part for detectives was that Kathleen Meyer's body was not immediately found (Swiski, 1988).

Murder of Michelle Ann Gordon

While police investigators were having the blue fibers taken from Pennell's van compared with fibers from the DiMauro crime scene, Michelle Ann Gordon, a 22-year-old white female, disappeared and was last seen Monday, September 19, 1988, at approximately 8:30 P.M. She was loitering in the area of Bill's Friendly Tavern, located well within the Route 13 and Route 40 corridor. The area was widely believed to be a prostitute pick-up location, and the victim was also heavily involved in cocaine use and was reputed to engage extensively in prostitution. Gordon mostly resided in motels within this corridor.

Figure 7.5 Body of Victim Gordon found on the rocks of the Delaware Canal. (Photograph courtesy of the Delaware State Police.)

The next day, Tuesday, September 20, 1988, at 10:12 A.M., Michelle Gordon's body, lying on the rock shoal of the Chesapeake and Delaware Canal banks, was discovered by a passing boater who observed it clearly from the water (see Figure 7.5). The body recovery site was a tidal waterway that was accessible on both sides by a dirt road that twisted off the main streets to an area not frequented by anyone but fishermen and loiterers. This canal area was desolate, with no businesses or residences within earshot and easily within 10 minutes' travel from where Steven Pennell and Michelle Gordon resided. The scene where the victim was found was not where the victim was killed. No evidence was located in this area.

Michelle Gordon was nude and in a face-down position. Soft tissue areas of her face were missing, which showed she had been submerged in the water for a period of time. At the scene, detectives saw abrasions around the victim's wrists and ankles, indicating that she had been bound before death (see

Figure 7.6 Band-like marks on the victim's ankles. (Photograph courtesy of the Delaware State Police.)

Figure 7.6). The entire nipple of her left breast had been cut or bitten away. The buttocks showed extensive antemortem bruising, with signs of a cylindrical instrument being used to cause those injuries. Superficial lacerations were seen on the rear of both legs. Some began in the lower portion of the buttock and ran to the lower portion of the thigh (Swiski, 1988).

An autopsy performed by Dr. Jonathan Arden (1988, September 20) ruled the classification of death as homicide. The mechanism of death was undetermined, with cocaine use listed as a contributing factor. Dr. Arden noted the following:

1. Contusions of buttocks probably by cylindrical object
2. Focal contusions of anterior hip, lower back, left upper arm, and anterior right knee, superficial abrasions and scratches of right forearm and knee
3. Band-like contusions of wrists and ankles, consistent with binding
4. Absence of left nipple, probably cut post mortem
5. Intravenous drug use
6. No evidence of sexual assault
7. Superficial cuts of both buttocks down thighs in linear fashion

The medical examiner concluded that Gordon was the victim of a homicide, but because her body had been submerged in water, no determination could be made as to the exact cause of death, but she was definitely ruled a victim of homicidal violence. Injuries inflicted on Gordon's body were very similar to those found on both Ellis and DiMauro.

On September 23, 1988, the Delaware State Police and New Castle County police investigation grew into a serial-killer task force in response to three murders and one missing-person report. The very act of forming a task force immediately placed a drain on manpower and resources for those two agencies. Police administrators typically pull from areas where the street crime units will not be impacted. After the Gordon discovery, the police began 24-hour surveillance of Steven Pennell, whose tags had come up during the search requested by Officer Lano on decoy detail. Although the police had formed a major force to search for the killer and the killer was well aware of it, Pennell was observed repeatedly cruising the same area of the highway corridor that was the site of the decoy operation. It was clear to police surveilling Pennell that the killer's control had reached far beyond the victims and now included the police and media. Typically, this is when the killer is most vulnerable because he's no longer invisible, he knows the police are trailing him but believes he can defeat them because he's exerting control. When the killer feels in control of the situation around him he tends to make mistakes, and that's when his risk of getting caught is greatest (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

On September 30, 1988, the police stopped Pennell for a traffic offense. A search of his van uncovered a bloodstain. Blue fibers and swatches of red cloth were taken from the van, all thought to be similar to the blue and red fibers found on the body of Catherine DiMauro. Search warrants were subsequently issued for Pennell's trailer, shed, vehicles, and person. Pursuant to these warrants, police seized a buck knife that was in the suspect's pocket, eight pairs of pliers, a bag of unused flex cuffs, and two rolls of duct tape (Swiski, 1988, September 27).

On November 12, 1988, at 10:30 A.M., the body of Margaret Finner was discovered by two hunters, approximately 3 to 4 feet off the roadway that runs along the Chesapeake and Delaware Canal, about 1 mile east of the St. Georges Bridge in south St. Georges. Her remains were severely decomposed, in fact, they were mostly skeletal from the thigh region up, including her skull. She was found nude, lying on her back, and although close to the road, was concealed by tall weeds. Dr. Jonathan Arden (1987, November 12) concluded that the victim died as a result of a homicide but the cause of death could not be determined. Because of the similarities of the circumstances and the area in which the victim was last seen, Dr. Arden thought this case too was related to the other cases.

In the affidavit for probable cause to search Pennell's van, much of the offering of proof relied on Officer's Lano's belief that probable cause existed if the facts would make a reasonably cautious person believe that the item in plain view is useful as evidence in a crime (Swiski, 1988, September 27). Officer Lano's information, which led her to believe that the blue fibers from the van's carpet might be useful as evidence, was extensive. She knew that a van matching Pennell's was used in at least one abduction, and that DiMauro's body was found covered in blue fibers that resembled those most often found in carpet. In addition, the FBI had given the police a profile of the person they thought was responsible for the murders describing the individual as a white male, between 25 and 35 years of age, probably in the construction or building trades, and residing in the general vicinity of the crimes. In their conversation at the van, Officer Lano elicited personal information from Pennell that coincided with the FBI profile (Swiski, 1988, September 27).

Appeal Attacks the Signature Testimony

Attorneys for Steven Pennell contended that agent Douglas's testimony went beyond the scope of the trial court's ruling. The trial court permitted FBI Agent Douglas to testify as to the "signature" aspects of the crime but would not allow the introduction of "profile" evidence. "Profile" evidence is that which attempts to link the general characteristics of serial murderers to specific characteristics of the defendant. Such evidence is of little probative value and extremely prejudicial to the defendant, since he is, in a sense, being

accused by a witness who was not present at any of the crimes (Douglas, 1989, October 5).

Attorneys for Pennell argued that Douglas's testimony that the perpetrator was "not youthful" impermissibly implicated Pennell, who then was 32 years old. Upon examining the context of the comment, however, members of the Supreme Court of Delaware were satisfied that Douglas's statement was not improper. Douglas noted the sophistication of the crimes, which tended to negate their commission by an inexperienced youth. Thus, he stated, "we are not talking about, well, a youthful type of offender." "Youthful" was in reference to the criminal experience of the perpetrator rather than his age. Moreover, Douglas never gave an age range for the offender and "youthful" is open to numerous interpretations. Therefore, under all of the circumstances, the court was satisfied that Douglas did not impermissibly interject "profile" evidence into the case (Douglas, 1989, October 5).

Douglas further testified (1989, October 5) that the victims were alive when they received the wounds, even though the infliction of those wounds was a little different. It is a unique type of individual who wants to keep his victim alive during that type of prolonged and painful physical assault. The killer obviously is maintaining control over the crime scene and has no fear of detection. He also has his victim under such control that her screams of pain and terror don't unnerve him. Quite the contrary, the assailant's resistance only serves to make him angrier until he works through his arc of fury. The suffering of the victim only intensifies that experience and thus serves to drive the fury even further, until the anger crashes like a wave and abates (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

The lack or absence of sexual assault was also hard to understand, even though there was a clear reason behind what the killer was doing. The physical signature on the victim showed that the general theme driving the killer was anger, not the craving for immediate sexual satisfaction. Anger indicators were the assailant's removal of the victim's nipple, the scars from ligature marks, and the physical evidence of binding. The binding was also significant in that all four appendages were involved. The assailant rendered the victim unconscious quickly so he could tie her up without too much of a fight. What this indicated was is that there was some transportation involved from the pick-up site to the murder site and finally to the body recovery site (Douglas, 1989, October 5).

The signature testimony (Douglas, 1989, October 5) also concluded that the victim did not die swiftly. The defendant wanted to spend time with the victim and, therefore, wanted to transport her to an area where he could spend as much time as he wished to do whatever he was inclined to. In addition, there was a degree of sophistication: mobility on the part of the offender, careful bindings to both wrists, and a special attention paid by the killer to the victim's breast, where the wounds are fixated. This was not the signature

of an unsophisticated or novice offender who was tentatively improvising his way through the crime. This was a veteran assailant who understood control, felt the need to exercise it, and knew exactly how to take it. Therefore, this offender was not youthful (Douglas, 1989, October 5).

FBI agent John Douglas (1989, October 5) summarized the signature aspects of nipple mutilation as extremely unusual. It was the subject's ritual that he must repeat time and time again because it is critical to his working out of the crime. The bindings went beyond binding for just transportation. They had a significance that imparted domination by the killer and, therefore, were considered a kind of ritual. The bindings served to excite the killer sexually. They became an archetypal moment of the crime that the killer must complete before he actually began to assault the victim leading to death. Its principal aim was for the assailant to manipulate, dominate, and control his victims.

A good signature investigator always learns to separate the signature—the part of the crime the killer does not control—from the modus operandi (M.O.), the carrying out of the crime that is under the killer's control. In the Pennell murders, the dissimilarities in crimes were related to his M.O. and not to his signature. The different dump sites did not reveal a concerted effort to conceal the bodies. Pennell understood that sooner or later these victims would be found, so he dumped them in desolate areas where no one would see him with the victims. One cannot link the victim's state of dress or undress. That, too, was catch as catch can because he left them as he left them and not as he wanted them to be discovered. And, the head trauma was different for each victim, too, because the specific forms of head trauma weren't part of the signature. The head trauma was important only because of the way the killer expressed his anger. But, conversely, there was evidence of tools in each case, whether it be a pinching tool or hammer. The key areas to focus on were the extent and nature of the wounds and the use of bindings and the prerequisite that the victim was alive when she received these injuries (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

The postmortem cutting of the nipple with regard to the third victim was not part of the M.O. That was part of the ritual, and his focal area was the breast, which still made it unique even though with the third victim the injury was postmortem. The injuries to the nipple area for Ellis and DiMauro, and the beating of the buttock area of the third victim, were the focal areas. The court upheld the testimony of agent Douglas in the Steven Pennell murder cases (*State v. Pennell*, 1991).

At trial, it was reported in the *Wilmington News-Journal* (Caddell, 1991, November 1) that Judge Richard Gebelein ruled that the state had proved the statutory aggravating circumstances—one being that the murder of Gordon was "outrageously and wantonly vile, horrible, and inhuman in that it involved torture …"—and that they outweighed any mitigating circumstances. Pennell

showed no reaction as Gebelein read his decision. His mother sobbed uncontrollably. Gebelein said:

> The evidence shows that in a coldly premeditated fashion defendant abducted Michelle Gordon. He held her in captivity alone and afraid. He bound her hand and foot. He tortured her. He murdered her, mutilated, and disposed of her body.
>
> The victim … experienced terror, fear, pain and hopelessness …. Here, suffering and death call for retribution. In the case of Kathleen Meyer …we know only that she died at the hands of the defendant, and probably died in his van. Her death calls for retribution.
>
> The enormity of these two crimes, their cold-blooded pre-meditation, and their callous execution clearly outweigh any mitigating factors.

Pennell was sentenced to death. Later, led past all the cameras and shouting reporters to a waiting prison van, Pennell only smiled (Caddell, 1991, November 1).

Pathological Approach to the Killer's M.O. and Signature

While preparing their murder kits for organized excursions into their fantasy life and murderous episodes of reality, which they consider fun, most serial offenders have kept their goals in mind and sorted out from past experiences what worked, and looked for methods of improvement for the future. That is, after progressing through earlier phases of learning and discarding obsolete M.O. elements, the killer selected what was and was not critical to him at the crime scenes. In these Delaware cases, the focus for the operative pathologies that highlighted the killer's signature is reflected in the ascendancy and range of the cusp in the sadistic arc of violent behavior. Sometimes the signature was intermingled and co-dependent with M.O. factors. But the pathological features that adorned the killer's signature in each one of these murders were evident in the following intrinsic behavioral patterns: the arc of dominance/submission, the use of bondage as discipline, and the acts of picquerism (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

A highly prevalent feature of the killer's signature in each of these cases was the killer's dominance/submission continuum over the victim. The ritual series of dominating actions necessary to incapacitate and render the victim submissive were precedent conditions and stimulants for the killer's perceived needs of potency. Especially, once ritualized with signs and symbols, the sum effect is greater than the parts (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

At the beginning of the Delaware series, the choice of prostitute victims may have been primarily a function of the M.O. factor of easy availability.

However, as time progressed, the omission of any other types indicated that he targeted a certain type of victim for his own internal satisfaction. In the world of predator and prey, the interest is made higher and more exciting by doing combat with a worthy foe. In these murders, the notion of outwitting and maneuvering the purveyors of rental romance of the streets may have been the onset for his developing desire to ensnare, trap, and crush the victims. Hence, the killer's signature over time became more activated through the pathology of dominance and submission over prostitutes. This is important because it does not mean that prostitutes were merely easy prey because of their profession. It meant that the killer saw a special challenge in bringing women he perceived as strong and challenging to a state of true submission through terror and pain and not just because they were acting a role they'd been paid for. Pennell wanted the real thing and killed to get it (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Steven Pennell's signature feature of dominance and submission over his victims fit a clear pattern compatible with the other deviant forms of violence he perpetrated against these victims, such as specialized torture, prolonged terror, and physical and emotional humiliation. In the killer's administration of pain, angst, and despair, his signature and M.O. dovetailed so that each supported the other. For example, the use of a hammer-like instrument in each case showed the effectiveness of his tool choice—which worked—and, at the same time, the perpetrator benefited from the effect it created for the victim (*State v. Pennell*, 1991).

Eventually, when three blows to a victim's head were no longer satisfactory, the killer changed his M.O. to include arms, back, knees, and pelvis. Again, while the signature for pain remained constant, the method of operation was expanded and modified. When considering the hammer attacks on each of the victims, it was significant to note the value of that to the killer. That is, while taped and bound, the victims were systematically pummeled with the weapon to cause a maximum amount of torturous pain. As a result, the victims reported back to the killer with muffled screams and moans. This was a stimulus–response reaction from the hammer blows to targeted areas of the body. After all this, despite the physical incapacitation of each victim, it was noteworthy that as the M.O. became more elaborate and dynamic, the killer struck those areas of the body that represented strength. Those were areas rich with bones and nerves that yielded a maximum amount of sensory stimulation (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Adjunctive in the killer's mind to the satisfactions he received from seeing the direct cause and effect of pain he was inflicting with each blow, the messages of resistance and submission were translated by each victim via visual, tactile, and auditory feedback. They visibly suffered, they shuddered and flinched at each blow, and they cried out in pain. For an anger-driven predator seeking retaliatory revenge in short periods of time, this feedback

represented the central core of the killer's pathological satisfaction (Keppel & Birnes, 1997). In a personal interview, Ted Bundy (November 17, 1984, unpublished) once said that a short time between murders meant that the killer "was very intense."

The killer's interest in the response of moaning caused by acts of torture augmented with sensory supplements was a strong indication that the sound was also arousing him sexually. The more the victim moaned or cried, the more it indicated her submission to his dominance and the more it turned him on. This is a common sexual fetish that men who frequent prostitutes demand, and most prostitutes go along with it. In 90% of the encounters, it's only acting. When the johns actually get violent in order to elicit groaning and cries of pain, it represents a criminally deviant sexual crime. Pennell elicited these responses through torture. He inflicted with specific tools so that eventually, the tools themselves had the power to arouse him sexually. Therefore, they became ritualized. We saw this signature in the Michelle Gordon murder, where Pennell inflicted pain on her through the use of a tool while she was still alive (Arden, 1988, September 20).

Pennell's use of multiple forms of tactile aggression revealed his appetite for variant forms of domination. Especially with his last victim, Michelle Gordon, Pennell was no longer capable of sating his needs with simple percussion as he had done in the Ellis and DiMauro murders. Instead, his experimentation and developing signature thrust him forward into elaborate and intrusive forms of dependency, dread, and degradation. He bit or cut off the victim's nipple, attacked her all over her body, and, apparently, spent a considerable amount of time with her keeping her alive while he tortured her (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Finally, the cycle of domination was complete when the victims succumbed to the ultimate submission. While alive, the barometer of the killer's effectiveness was how he humiliated the victims. In those circumstances, the killer enjoyed each aspect of the sensory feedback he received from the suffering victim. He could see the results of his blow, he could smell or even taste blood, he could feel blows and the victim's response to them, and he could hear and get off on the sounds of pain and suffering the victim involuntarily uttered. Once dead, however, the victim offered Pennell new opportunities for enjoyment: his final act in the dominance/submission continuum, the disposal of each victim. Here, in each case, he dumped them, almost tumbled them into a submissive position, mostly on their backs and discarded like trash. Pennell engaged the victims on their own lifestyle terms—hitchhiking or hooking—exercised domination over them, beating them at their own game by perpetrating in reality what they only playacted at feeling, and then reducing them to throwaway garbage, shocking pieces of human remains left to die as if they were animal roadkill (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Pennell also exercised control and satisfied himself sexually through the compression and restraint of bondage. Bondage was an adjunct to his torture and sexual dominance/submission signatures and struck to the heart of control in these murders. To be totally bound eliminated any control by the victim, and created a feeling of absolute mastery for the killer. The killer consistently used bondage mechanisms for victim control and personal perversity. Throughout the cases, he ritualistically secured wrists, ankles, and throats. After death, he removed these bindings and undoubtedly kept them as trophies of the kill. Again, the signature and M.O. ran along parallel lines within the killer's efforts at bondage. On one hand, the restraints were necessary control devices, whereas, on the other hand, they demonstrated the pathological and sinister elements of physical conquest. Increasingly, while viewing himself as virile and a superhuman beast, the bondage activities conveyed a real sense of control and a rush of superiority over the victims, as if the act of bondage itself were the objective correlative to the allegory of humiliating death that aroused his deepest sexual passions (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

In particular, the strangulation of each victim was indicative of the killer's direct need to play on the tightrope of life and death. There was a direct and tactile experience of giving or taking a life. In addition, the gagging and noises from the victims were important to these signature behaviors, and, while eclipsing the head and brain center, the strangulation had a direct relationship to breathing, gasping, and recovery. Those activities were strong and a potent thrust for the killer (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

In addition, consistent with a signature theory of strangulation, the duct tape served as a regulator of restraint. That is, if a victim was not sufficiently verbal (moans and groans), the killer could temporarily loosen the tape to offer a pseudo promise of recovery, and manipulated the victim into begging for mercy and release. Equally, the tape could serve to mute the victim into an automaton who had been stripped of her identity. Thus, the killer fantasized super-mastery at turning prostitutes into nothingness. Under these circumstances, the tape became a tool of human obliteration and restraint by compression. As with the deviant sexual stimulation of the act of bondage itself, the auditory moans served as the tension-release mechanisms of that bondage. It was the soundtrack of the perverted satisfaction of the killer. The bondage described here was pathological and an important factor in the killer's signature. It's something he had to do with each of his victims (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

From the bra-cutting in the Ellis case, the implication of cutting and knives—picquerism—gained importance as a tool of torture and threat for subsequent victims. Eventually, the case of Michelle Gordon revealed how pathologically important picquerism had become to the killer through his infliction of superficial cuts on both buttocks and down the thighs in linear fashion. In addition, there were added foreign-object penetrations in the

form of hammer blows onto the buttocks. Picquerism is actually an advanced state of signature because it requires that killers spend more time with their victims, experiment visually with a pattern or actually cover a body part with wounds, determine where on the victim's body they're most likely to find satisfaction through inflicting wounds, and penetrate the victim just enough to cause the wound and provide satisfactory sexual feedback without actually hacking up the victim in an overkill signature. As bizarre and gruesome as it appears to most people, this is what signature means and how police have to evaluate it in order to investigate this type of homicide (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Most significantly, from the killer's first victim, Shirley Ellis, through his final murder, Michelle Gordon, the killer bit and mutilated the victims' breasts. Again, the application of pain to a sensitive area by biting was a strong indicant signature for picquerism. In particular, by biting and mutilating the breast, the killer caused pain and sated his needs for cutting, penetration, and invasion (Keppel & Birnes, 1997).

Vernon Geberth (2006) summarized the three murders in the following ways: Sexual sadism is a progressive disorder. The injuries to victim Catherine DiMauro were even more severe than those of victim Shirley Ellis. Catherine DiMauro was totally nude and there was evidence of severe breast assault as well as additional injuries of torture, including paddling. The body has been provocatively displayed in a public area by the killer for purposes of "shock value." The third victim, Michelle Gordon, was dumped into Chesapeake-Delaware Canal. The killer became aware that the authorities had linked these series of killings through blue carpet fibers recovered from the bodies of the first two victims. An inappropriate news release by someone in the FBI alerted the suspect, who began dumping bodies in water to eliminate the blue carpet fiber evidence.

As a jury member could observe, Steven Pennell exhibited a clear signature and committed acts on his victims that were far and away more than necessary to commit the murders. The core of Pennell's intrinsic behavior could never change. If he had not been caught, undoubtedly the law enforcement authorities in Delaware would have investigated more victims. In his search for other victims, Detective Joe Swiski told me that Pennell's killings were unprecedented for the state of Delaware, and they immediately ended when Pennell was apprehended. The *Wilmington News Journal* (Caddell, 1992, March 15) reported "Delaware executes Pennell: No last words from serial killer."

References

Arden, J. L. (1987, November 30). Autopsy report—Shirley Ellis, Wilmington, DE: Office of the Chief Medical Examiner.

Arden, J. L. (1988, June 29). Autopsy report—Catherine DiMauro, Wilmington, DE: Office of the Chief Medical Examiner.

Arden, J. L. (1988, September 20). Autopsy report—Michelle A. Gordon, Wilmington, DE: Office of the Chief Medical Examiner.

Caddell, T. (1991, November 1). Pennell gets death, Wilmington, DE: *News Journal*.

Caddell, T. (1992, March 15). Delaware executes Pennell: No last words from serial killer, Wilmington, DE: *Sunday News Journal*.

Douglas, J. E. (1989, October 5). Trial transcript of the testimony of John E. Douglas, New Castle County, DE: *State vs. Steven B. Pennell*.

Geberth, V. J. (2006). *Practical Homicide Investigation: Tactics, Procedures, and Forensic Techniques*. Boca Raton, FL: CRC Press.

Keppel, R. D. & Birnes, W. J. (1997). *Signature Killers*. New York: Pocket Books.

State v. Pennell (1991). 602 *Atlantic Reporter*, 2d Series.

Swiski, J. (1988, September 27). Probable Cause Sheet: Search Warrant Application and Affidavit, Wilmington, DE: New Castle County.

Swiski, J. (1988). Serial Homicide Investigation—Similarities of Cases Work Sheet, Delaware State Police.

The Ritual of Sexual Degradation through Posing of Victims

8

Introduction

To understand how a killer sexually degrades a victim's body, one must be able to interpret the differences among the natural disposition of a victim's remains, staging a scene, and posing a body. In most murders, the killer leaves the victim's body where it drops or in a position after the death-producing injuries have been inflicted. The victim is left, typically, at the body recovery site, in a natural position for a dead person. The killer does not do anything to or with the body, above and beyond what is involved in killing or disposing of the victim. In a very few cases, the body disposition is unusual. Clearly, the killer has done something to the victim—ante- or postmortem—that has produced the unusual victim disposition. There are two subtypes of unusual body disposition, each of which is even more unusual and rare—"posing" and "staging" (Geberth, 1996; 2003; Keppel & Weis, 2004).

The act of leaving a victim's body in an unusual position is a conscious criminal action by an offender to thwart an investigation, shock the finder and investigators of the crime scene, or give perverted pleasure to the killer. The unusual position concepts of posing and staging a murder victim have been documented thoroughly and have been accepted by the courts as a definable phenomenon (Geberth, 1996; 2003; Morton, 2002; Keppel & Weis, 2004).

"Staging" is the purposeful alteration of the crime scene. It consists of manipulating the elements of the scene to make it appear to be something it is not. Staging has been widely written about and has been accepted by the courts as a definable characteristic of a crime scene. The basis of staging is to direct an investigation away from the person who stages the crime scene, because the person feels he or she would be a likely target of the investigation. Staging can be as simple as the owner of a car setting his car on fire to collect insurance and reporting his car as stolen. In another example, in 1974, convicted murderer Tony Fernandez bludgeoned his wife to death. To cover up the murder and prevent the discovery of a crime, he placed her body behind the steering wheel of their motor home and pushed it over an embankment, hoping to make the murder look like an accident to redirect the investigation. Another motivation for preventing detection by staging is to alter a murder scene to look like a burglary or robbery gone awry. Staging a murder scene requires that the killer spend time after the victim's death arranging things

in a certain way. The person who stages a crime scene does so based upon his or her own experiences and perceptions of how certain crime scenes should look. These actions go beyond the actions necessary to commit a murder (Geberth, 1996, 2003; Keppel, 2000, 2002; Meloy, 2002; Morton, 2002).

Staging of a Murder Scene

In the murder of Lisa Carlson in Pierce County, Washington, the testimony of an agent of the FBI's Behavioral Sciences Unit declared that the crime scene was staged. The purpose of the staging was to direct suspicion away from the identity of the perpetrator by making a murder look like a "burglary and/or rape gone bad." A multitude of factors describe the killer's efforts to stage this murder scene. First, the most egregious staging factor is the discontinuity between the actual cause of death and staged crime scene. The two are not reconcilable. For three gunshot wounds, one to the body and two to the head, without any percussive violence, is albeit a conceptual motive of power, control and problem resolution. Conversely, the victim is staged in a setting that pretends to portray a sex murder through the use of (1) sexual paraphernalia, (2) sex videos, (3) disarrayed pants, and (4) covered genitalia. In this case, there is no evidence of percussive touching of the victim until after the killing; the perpetrator manipulated the body for staging of a greater and different type of murder. Again, by the lack of antemortem, perimortem, or postmortem percussive activity on the body of the victim, the perpetrator inadvertently exposed the fraudulent attempt to disguise the original simple motive and executed plan. Notwithstanding, it should be clear that a wandering psychopathic sex-killer would not be concerned with staging or focusing law enforcement attention elsewhere. In fact, the manner of death in this case is clearly an issue of ending the victim's power and control. Of course, this would only be true for those whom she had the ability to resist (Keppel, 2002).

Second, Lisa Carlson was not shot in the position she was found. She had been moved to that position after being shot. Typically, murder victims are discovered in the position where the death-producing injuries occur, and their killers are unconcerned about how the victim is found. In this case, the victim was moved to her final resting place. She has been pulled back to her position on the couch (see Figure 8.1). The killer grabbed the victim's sweater, causing it to bunch and enabling him to pull her to her place on the couch. The victim could not have caused the bunching to occur (Keppel, 2002).

Third, after the shooting, the victim's pants were pulled down. This occurred by someone's standing at the victim's feet, pulling on the pants, and thereby causing the pants to turn inside out. There is no credible evidence that shows the victim could have pulled her own pants down in that position (Keppel, 2002).

Figure 8.1 Staged body with blood evidence that indicates the body had been moved after the shooting and the electronic device placed in the victim's left hand. She was right-handed. (Photograph courtesy of Pierce County Sheriff's Department, Tacoma, Washington.)

Fourth, blood spatter evidence demonstrates that the victim was fixed in place after the shooting and then moved. In order for the hair swipe to occur on the couch, the victim's hair must accumulate blood for a period of time. In addition, the swiping blood pattern on the victim's inner arm is evidence that her right arm came in contact with her hair while being pulled back to her final resting place (Keppel, 2002).

Fifth, the blood transfer evidence on the sexual device indicates that the device was placed there after the shooting. There are sweeping blood transfer stains present on the cord and device that occurred while they were being positioned. In addition, the device was placed in her left hand, but she is right-handed (Keppel, 2002). Sixth, the blanket found on top of the victim was placed there after she was shot and the transfer stains had occurred on the sexual device and cord.

The number of blood stains on and around the victim contrasts with the neatness in the application of the placement of the victim, sexual device, and blanket. The body was moved from the position that it was in prior to the blood spatter patterns to the position it was found at discovery (Keppel, 2002).

Seventh, the ransacking of the chest of drawers in the victim's bedroom was a solitary event, not consistent with ransacking done in the normal burglary case (see Figure 8.2). It was not consistent, since there

was no ransacking done in other rooms and there were valuables obviously present. Furthermore, there was no apparent loss of any valuable items. Traditionally, televisions, video recorders, and computer equipment would have been moved or removed. But these items appeared untouched and were not disturbed.

In addition, more inconsistencies in the ransacking were present. The drawers were removed from the chest of drawers. One drawer was not overturned and another blocked the removal of a drawer from the second and third level of the chest of drawers. The blocking drawer would have been thrown out of the way by a curious burglar. The contents of these drawers were not gone through in a typical manner. One drawer was just pulled out and set on top of other contents, but was not overturned. The bottom drawers did not appear to ever have been opened. In burglary crimes, when there is rifling through drawers, their contents are usually disturbed, even dumped out or strewn about. But in this case, there was no noticeable disturbance of the contents of one drawer that was removed from the chest. Only drawers containing items belonging to Lisa Carlson were rifled through in the house.

Figure 8.2 Victim's bedroom area ransacked by the killer. (Photograph courtesy of Pierce County Sheriff's Department, Tacoma, Washington.)

Figure 8.3 Secondary bedroom with contents belonging to the killer. (Photograph courtesy of Pierce County Sheriff's Department, Tacoma, Washington.)

Finally, the telephone answering tape was tampered with. There was an expectation that there would be a sequence of messages left on the tape. It was detected that two messages overlapped, and this could only occur if someone had tampered with the tape recording (Keppel, 2002).

A killer's method of operation contains those actions that are necessary to commit a murder. Whatever this killer did beyond committing the murder, such as moving the victim from the place she was shot to her final resting place, placing the on–off switch to the electronic dildo in her wrong hand, placing a blanket over her lower torso after smearing blood on items and clothing under the blanket, leaving drawers open with atypical burglary and theft disturbance, manipulating the tape on the victim's telephone messaging machine, and either not removing anything or removing only small items with other typical burglary loot in plain sight ready for the taking, was the killer(s) highly personalized effort to stage the scene (Keppel, 2002).

Posed Scenes for Sexual Degradation Purposes

Posing entails adorning only the body and not the scene. The act of deliberate posing involves positioning of the victim's body, like posing a person for a photograph. In one case of posing, a deranged killer repositioned mutilated and amputated body parts back in their correct anatomic positions. In another investigation, a mother and daughter were found nude in their home. The mother was located on a couch, eviscerated, and her vagina inserted in her mouth. The mother's breasts were found in the bedroom where the daughter was discovered. The daughter was also eviscerated and a baseball bat inserted in her vaginal area. Investigators concluded that the killer positioned these two victims for "shock value." Two purposes of posing are to leave the victim in a sexually degrading position: (1) to shock the finder of the body or police investigators, and (2) for the killer's own pleasure. Posing is not to be confused with staging because staging refers to manipulation of the scene around the body as well as positioning of the body to make the scene appear to be something that it is not (Keppel & Weis, 2004).

Mary Ann Pohlreich Murder

Fifteen years after Bundy made headlines in the Northwest, a more contemporary killer emerged, one who learned that live victims struggle too much and dead ones are much more obliging. His name was George W. Russell, and he frequented the yuppie singles bars at a time when the Seattle area was quickly becoming the center of the cyber universe. George Russell's first victim was discovered mutilated on one warm Seattle morning. It should have been a signal that a brutal cycle of a signature killer who liked to pose his victims had just begun.

June 23, 1990, just after 7:30 A.M., began routinely for an employee of the McDonald's fast-food restaurant located next door to the Black Angus restaurant in Bellevue, Washington. Both eateries used the same garbage area in the back parking lot of the Black Angus. The employee's first trip to the dumpster that morning was his last for the day after he made a startling discovery of a deceased woman who was incongruously lying near a pile of sweepings (see Figure 8.4). Clearly, the victim's body had been deliberately posed. The employee called Bellevue police.

There was no question in anyone's mind that whoever committed the Bellevue murder hadn't worried about spending considerable time with the corpse of the woman after her death. The body had been displayed in a busy area—the killer obviously wanted his work to be discovered quickly—nude and arranged to send the unmistakable message of sexual degradation. The victim was left lying on her back, with her left foot crossed over the instep of

Figure 8.4 The posed body of the first victim of George Russell. (Photograph courtesy of the Bellevue Police Department, Bellevue, Washington.)

her right ankle. Her head was turned to the left and a Frito-Lay dip container lid rested on top of her right occipital orbit. Her arms were bent at the elbow and crossed over her abdomen with her hands touching, one inside the other. In one hand, detectives found a Douglas fir cone.

The victim's gold watch on her left wrist and her gold choker chain with a crescent-shaped white pendant around her neck were the only personal items left on her. Noting that the perpetrator had removed all of the victim's clothing, the police figured that he was either too pressed for time to strip her of her jewelry or he didn't see any value in the pieces and deliberately left them as adornments to the body.

The surface of the garbage area, uncommonly clean, was a cement rectangle bordered by the asphalt pavement of the parking lot. A pile of debris was within 3 feet of the victim's head, and two brooms were leaning up against the wooden fence that enclosed the area on three sides. The body was discovered near the unfenced side. In front of the trash compactor, several blood stains and chips of fingernail polish were found. Police investigators surmised from this evidence that the killer had initially taken the victim deep into the trash area, as if he were going to deposit her in the dumpster, but then decided to display the body prominently back toward the opening, where it could be clearly seen.

The victim had wounds indicative of strangulation; severe blows to the right eye, nose, and mouth, and abrasions—received after death—to the right arm, right breast, both hips, knees, and feet. Those postmortem injuries were produced when the killer dragged the body about 20 feet along the parking lot surface to inside the fenced garbage area. The injuries she had received before death looked like defense wounds, suggesting that she had put up a struggle when she was attacked.

The medical examiner had determined that death took place between 2:30 A.M. and 5:20 A.M. A late-night Black Angus worker who had dumped garbage at 3:15 A.M. said the body was not there at that time. Because the body was discovered within 4 to 5 hours after death, it was concluded that the victim was probably killed someplace else and brought to the dumpster area.

The autopsy examination revealed blunt impact injuries to the head that produced a fracture to the right base of the skull and similar injuries to the abdomen that caused a laceration of the liver. The medical examiner found the victim's stomach empty, and her toxicological screen showed a blood alcohol level of .14. The victim had been raped, her anus had been severely lacerated with a foreign object, and sperm was detected in her vagina.

Depending upon the experience of this victim's killer, the experimentation at this crime scene was probably the groundwork being laid for possible style modification in the next crime. His modus operandi (M.O.) could change, but his signature could become enhanced in some way at the next crime scene. For example, when a killer spends more and more time rearranging bodies in successive murder scenes, that very act is indicative of a more intense need for the killer to display victims in poses that arouse him sexually, and is the core of the killer's signature. The period of time that the killer is with successive victims may increase with each scene as well as the number of postmortem activities, provided the killer is not interrupted.

This killer will be affected by his internal stresses, like every serial killer, and will repeat the crime on a sporadic or episodic schedule. Either a particular victim type will turn him on and set him into motion, stalking her or tracking her movements, or an event will precipitate a sexual episode that he can satisfy only by taking a victim. Conditional to the satisfaction received by reliving a former murder, his motivation for further domination and exploration may wax and wane. But again, it's always persistent. So the assumption that this ritualistic killer will always strike again is highly likely.

On June 27, 1990, the victim found behind the Black Angus was positively identified through dental records as Mary Ann Pohlreich, who had been listed missing a day or so after her body was first discovered. Police routinely ran a search of missing-person reports when a Jane or John Doe turned up, and Mary Ann's identity was discovered after just such a search. Mary Ann Pohlreich was white, 27 years old, 5 feet 7 inches tall, 150, with light brown, shoulder-length, slightly curly hair and blue-gray eyes. The

Figure 8.5 Papagayo's Restaurant, the location from which the first victim went missing. (Photograph courtesy of the Bellevue Police Department, Bellevue, Washington.)

young woman was last seen alive on Friday, June 22, 1990 at about 10 P.M. at Papagayo's Cantina, a popular yuppie singles' bar and dance spot in Bellevue, the high-tech suburb of Seattle (see Figure 8.5). Papagayo's is located about one mile northwest of the Black Angus Restaurant. Evidently, the victim left the restaurant either with her killer or with the person who transitioned her to her killer because her 1984 Chevrolet Camaro sat undisturbed in Papagayo's parking lot, and her purse, which contained her car keys, was found later in the lost-and-found property at Papagayo's.

Detectives surmised that Pohlreich had met someone at Papagayo's, possibly a date, with whom she left after 10 P.M., intending to return to retrieve her purse and car. She was assaulted and murdered at an unknown location nearby and dumped behind the Black Angus after 3:15 A.M. Evidence from the murder suggested that it had been a sexual confrontation gone bad. Judging by the number of defense wounds and the blunt force injuries inflicted by the killer, Pohlreich put up quite a struggle prior to death and left her mark on her killer, possibly inflicting bruises and contusions in addition to having spilled a lot of blood. Undoubtedly, the killer had to wash her blood from him.

The rape-murderer rarely derives any specific sexual pleasure from the actual killing of the victim. Killing, in these cases, is usually only a means to an end, especially if the predator is a necrophiliac, who so enjoys the control

he wields over helpless bodies that he will kill to get to that point. The murder itself is usually a process wherein the thrill is in exercising control over the victim, both before and after death. But in the Pohlreich case it seemed the killer derived an especially great satisfaction from his postmortem sexual activities. He must have spent a considerable amount of time with the dead Mary Ann Pohlreich behind the Black Angus, because it was evident he took time to arrange her body carefully in its final pose, probably arranging it several different times before he got it just right, although the macabre ritual greatly increased the risk that someone might see him with the victim. This after-death victim–offender contact demonstrated the complete possessiveness by the killer and his ultimate degradation of the female victim, an M.O. all too typical of Ted Bundy. Pohlreich, therefore, was not killed by some common rape-murderer whom she spurned on a date, who got mad, beat her up, raped her, got scared, and then killed her. As tragic as a date-rape or a date-rape-murder is, and no one can diminish its impact on its victims, the Pohlreich murder had even more sinister overtones, because the obvious signature of the crime belonged to someone fitting the necrophilic profile of a serial killer.

Carol Beethe Murder

On August 9, 1990, just 47 days after Pohlreich's body was discovered, Carol Ann Beethe's mutilated body was found in the bedroom of her ranch-style one-story house. Beethe's home was located in a typical middle-class bedroom community, and bordered on each side by neighboring houses. Within the city limits of Bellevue, Washington, Carol Beethe's residence was less than 2 miles from the Black Angus restaurant where Mary Ann Pohlreich was found murdered.

Carol Beethe was the single mother of two daughters, ages 9 and 13, who were asleep in their shared bedroom, only 15 feet from the entrance of their mother's bedroom. Carol Beethe was a white female in her late 30s, 5 feet 2 inches, 108 pounds, with collar-length light blond hair. She was last seen entering her residence alone at 2:30 A.M. on August 9, 1990, by a neighbor who was out walking. The victim had been visiting a bartender friend at Bellevue's Keg Restaurant, another trendy singles hangout, before going home. Carol Beethe herself was a bartender at Cucina Cucina Restaurant, a frequent nightspot for singles in Bellevue, and was a member of a group of people who frequented the clubs and restaurants where George Russell could be found almost every night.

The crime scene was deliberately arranged by the killer. Carol Beethe was carefully positioned in open display on top of her bed. She was naked, except for a pair of red and white high-heeled shoes on her feet, and she was lying on her back. Her legs were completely splayed and her exposed groin

was facing the doorway of her bedroom. Inserted well up into her vagina was the barrel of an over-and-under rifle–shotgun combination, with its stock resting across her shoes. The weapon belonged to the victim. Bellevue Police Department Persons Crime Unit Detectives thought for a while that a pillow covering Beethe's face was used to smother her until they carefully lifted it and found that her head had been wrapped in a plastic dry-cleaning bag after she died (see Figure 8.6). Was the intruder readying the victim's body for removal from her house by placing her battered head in a plastic bag before he changed his mind and left her in her own bed or was he deliberately covering her face so her eyes wouldn't look at him after death?

Carol Beethe was savagely beaten—much more than was needed to kill her—with an unidentified blunt object that left forked or "Y"-shaped impressions all over the top of her head. It was clear from the way she had been beaten, undressed, adorned, and posed that the killer had exercised complete control over the crime scene and had remained in the house almost with impunity.

Figure 8.6 The victim's body found on her bed with a rifle inserted into her vaginal area. (Photograph courtesy of the Bellevue Police Department, Bellevue, Washington.)

The victim had two defense wounds, one on each hand, showing that the killer didn't have much trouble. Carol Beethe had been quickly subdued with blows to her abdomen and rib cage, and was probably knocked unconscious right away, just like Mary Ann Pohlreich, at which point the overkill and savagery began in earnest. Police determined that the gun and shoes were placed in and on the victim after death. The house door to the victim's bedroom was closed and locked; the murderer had come and gone through an open sliding-glass door to her bedroom. The murder weapon was not found.

Carol Beethe's murder, like Mary Ann Pohlreich's, was extremely unusual. Carol Beethe was killed indoors in her own bed with her children sleeping in the bedroom next door, whereas it appeared that Mary Ann Pohlreich had been brought to the dumpster area. The killer's approach to each victim was different. Mary Ann Pohlreich was thought to have been picked up on the dance floor of Papagayo's Cantina and induced to leave as if she were going on a date with a man. In sharp contrast, Carol Beethe was attacked while she was asleep in bed. The two women were displayed very differently with different items inserted into their vaginal cavities. Autopsy results indicated Pohlreich sustained damage from an object inserted into her vaginal area.

Andrea Levine Murder

Just when the Bellevue police were investigating the murders of Mary Ann Pohlreich and Carol Beethe, another area young woman was found murdered. On September 3, 1990, 24 days after the murder of Carol Ann Beethe, the body of Andrea Levine, who was also called Randy, was discovered in her ground-level apartment in Kirkland, Washington, which was within 5 miles to the north of the Bellevue Black Angus where Mary Ann Pohlreich's body was found. The municipality might have been different, but the location was essentially the same for the killer.

Andrea Levine was white, with collar-length dark-red hair. She was 24 years old, 5 feet 4 inches tall, and weighed about 120. She was last seen alive around midnight at the Maple Gardens Restaurant in Kirkland on August 30, 1990, with her friends but, according to witnesses, she left alone. Andrea Levine had been dead a few days before her landlord discovered her body, a few days after he'd chased what he reported as a "prowler" off his property. Like Mary Ann Pohlreich and Carol Beethe, Andrea Levine was known to frequent singles nightspots in Bellevue, but it was also possible that Levine had been stalked and her apartment broken into before her murder.

Levine's body was left supine on top of her bed. A pillow covered her bloody cranium and a top sheet hid her mutilated body (see Figure 8.7). Like Mary Ann Pohlreich and Carol Beethe, the killer clearly posed his victim. Her legs were spread and an electronic dildo was inserted in her

Figure 8.7 Levine's body on top of her bed. (Photograph courtesy of King County Sheriff's Department, Washington State.)

mouth, and the book *More Joy of Sex* was cradled in her left arm. She had been bludgeoned about the head violently and repeatedly by a killer who attacked her while she lay asleep. The attack was so swift that Levine probably never even had time to wake up, and that was why there were no defense wounds on her body. She had sustained more than 230 small cuts over the entire surface of her body, including the bottoms of her feet. The cuts were all made after Levine was killed, indicating, again, that the killer had spent a lot of time with the dead victim and was confident about controlling his crime scene. It appeared that a ring Levine was wearing and at least one serrated knife in the house had been taken by the killer; the murder weapon was not found. Levine's pickup truck was parked in its normal spot outside, and there were no signs of forced entry into the apartment.

The Killer's Signature

The Bellevue and Kirkland area of King County, Washington had averaged only one murder per year for the preceding ten years. Then, surprisingly,

within 67 days, the locale experienced three atypical murders within a 5-mile radius of each other. Were these the only crimes in the area? Was there any other activity that should have alerted police to the presence of violence in the community? At the very least, law-enforcement officials should have realized that there was a murder problem beyond normal proportions. Crimes of this magnitude just don't take place in a vacuum.

When the murders were analyzed by type and frequency of injuries and other unique characteristics from the first murder to the third, only one conclusion could be drawn: they were all committed by the same person. First, all three victims were intentionally left so someone would find them. They were not concealed or hidden but were placed in locations where they would be discovered quickly. The killer left them openly displayed, knowing that whoever found them would be shocked, both physically and psychologically (Keppel, 1995; Testimony of Robert Keppel, 1991).

Second, they were posed in sexually degrading positions: naked, arms spread or folded over as if in deliberate repose, holding or supporting items that revealed the killer's attitude toward them, and legs deliberately spread. The killer obviously received an intense sexual thrill from manipulating the victims' bodies so as to demonstrate their vulnerability after death. These bodies belonged to him. As part of the pose, only items that the killer found at the crime scene were incorporated into the victim's portraits—the crime shots that he knew would be taken by police photographers. He did this consistently in all three murders. For example, he used a pine cone with Mary Ann Pohlreich so that she was holding it and a Fritos lid on her head, which had been tilted to support it; he placed Beethe's red and white shoes on her feet with her legs spread apart, and he draped Levine's arm over her book, *More Joy of Sex*.

Third, the killer inserted foreign objects into the victims' sexual orifices as part of his protocol. The actual object was absent in the Pohlreich case because her vaginal area shows signs of penetration even though the object was missing. Was this an experiment that didn't work out or did the killer run out of time at the crime scene? His intentions would be made clear in the Carol Beethe murder, and after the Andrea Levine murder it was obvious that the act of inserting foreign objects and leaving them in their sexual cavities evolved from the first murder through the third. It became more a need for the killer to demonstrate his personal expression by leaving a rifle in Carol Beethe's vagina and a dildo in Andrea Levine's mouth.

Fourth, the collective presence of all three of those relatively rare characteristics in each of the three murders was an extraordinary occurrence. Notwithstanding the fact that the murders were committed in a small geographic area, the chain of those unusual characteristics was the fundamental aspect of the killer's signature.

Fifth, the strength of the defense each victim was allowed to put up decreased from the first murder through the third. It was as if the killer had gotten his act down more smoothly the more murders he carried out, so that his victims resisted him less with each murder. Mary Ann Pohlreich had multiple defense wounds, Carol Beethe had two small defense wounds, and Andrea Levine had none. The state of mind of the killer was influenced by the struggle put up by the first victim, so subsequent victims were not allowed any chance to fight back. Had the killer evolved further he would have found ways to move with even more stealth.

Sixth, the killer spent an increasing amount of time with each victim after death, rearranging their bodies in their final death poses. Remaining for any length of time behind the Black Angus restaurant and at the outdoor scene of Pohlreich's killing was very risky, as someone could come upon the scene and interrupt the killer, especially in light of the fights and yelling that witnesses reported to police during the evening that Mary Ann Pohlreich's body was placed there.

The killer was with Carol Beethe, injuring and arranging her body, for a longer period of time than he was with Mary Ann Pohlreich. This was deliberate. He had made mistakes with Mary Ann Pohlreich, but he learned a lot in the process. He'd learned never to take the kinds of chances with a dead body out in the open that he did with Mary Ann Pohlreich's. By the time he had gone through the arc of his anger and come out the other side, he had become a signature killer. The killer even spent more time with Andrea Levine, cutting her body more than 230 times and arranging her body.

Seventh, and last, the number of injuries sustained by each victim increased from the Pohlreich case through the Levine case. Mary Ann Pohlreich sustained just enough injuries to cause her death, but not much more. The blows to her abdomen lacerated her liver, but didn't kill her. The blow to her head knocked her out. She was killed by strangulation, and the time Russell spent with her after death was to pose her, and that just barely, after he found he couldn't get her into the compactor. Carol Beethe was beaten severely, clearly more than what was necessary to kill her. Andrea Levine was beaten even more excessively than the previous two victims, but the more than 200 cuts Russell inflicted were a clear indication that he was evolving into greater violence, even as elements of his ongoing signature still remained. The increasing number of injuries reflected the killer's need to exercise absolute possession by creatively defiling their bodies.

The gradual increases and decreases in certain acts—inflicting an increasing number of injuries in each case, spending more and more time after death with each victim, and reducing the participation on the part of a live victim from the first case to the last—in conjunction with open display, posing, and

sexual insertion of foreign objects, were the specific factors that identified the signature of the killer in the Pohlreich, Beethe, and Levine cases, definitely led to the conclusion that all three women were killed by the same person (Keppel, 1993; Keppel & Birnes, 1997; testimony of Robert Keppel, 1991).

Arrest of George Russell (Keppel and Birnes, 1997)

George Russell, the man who was ultimately convicted for the three murders on the basis of evidence and a linkage analysis, was a living example of the changing face of a serial murderer. He was truly a serial killer of the 1990s: a black man from an educated middle-class family who grew up in the exclusive upper-class white neighborhood of Mercer Island, Washington, and socialized easily in the Seattle yuppie singles community. Russell could almost be called a "Six Degrees of Separation Killer," who recognized no racial distinctions unless they served his purpose, and in the mating rituals of the Mercer Island and Bellevue communities, was not impeded by racial barriers. Just the like the Ted Bundys, Jeffrey Dahmers, Arthur Shawcrosses, John Gacys, and other signature killers who lived in the communities where they snapped up their victims, Russell frequented singles bars and restaurants, and dated and lived with young women from different backgrounds.

Russell became a suspect in the murders after an alert Seattle police detective, Rick Buckner, discovered that he was investigating Russell for possession of stolen property taken in a burglary of a residence close to the murder scene of Andrea (Randy) Levine. Russell first came to Buckner's attention in May 1990, after police responded to a call of a fight that had broken out between two men in downtown Seattle. As uniformed officers arrived, a black male, who had posed as a police officer to the combatants, was in the process of breaking up the fight. The officers were immediately suspicious of him because he seemed to be hiding something. There was a deviousness about him that set them on alert, so they questioned him further and patted him down. That was when they found the pistol he had concealed. He was arrested for impersonating an officer and taken into custody. The pistol was seized as evidence, traced on the computer by its serial number, and found to be stolen property taken in a burglary in the Totem Lake area north of Bellevue where Andrea Levine lived. They booked him under the name of George Russell.

After Buckner confirmed that the stolen property in Russell's possession came from a Bellevue robbery near a murder site, he contacted Bellevue detectives Marv Skeen and Dale Foote, who were investigators in the murders of Mary Ann Pohlreich and Carol Beethe, respectively. They, along with King County police detective Larry Peterson, who was investigating the Kirkland murder of Andrea Levine, began winding a tight web of physical evidence around Russell that they hoped would provide a reason to take him into

custody and hold him. They were not disappointed, because Russell's murder skein was still underway. The start–stop sequence to the three murders had appeared arbitrary, but it was not. The invisible killer wanted to strike again. His open display of the bodies—a kind of private art form that he was exhibiting—was far from finished. At the same time, Bellevue police were actively searching for some way to catch Russell in the act. They were on the hunt for the man they believed to be their serial killer. Their only question was whether they would catch Russell in the act or would they have another murder on their hands first.

Fate intervened on their behalf on September 7, 1990, two weeks after the murder of Andrea Levine. Bellevue police flooded a residential area when a prowler call was sounded. Just as it had been years before on Mercer Island, George Russell was walking slowly away when police spotted him nearby. Russell identified himself as if he weren't doing anything wrong and had nothing to hide, but the police arrested him on a misdemeanor commitment warrant. Then a startling thing happened. The complaining party was a female who was an acquaintance of George Russell, just as Randy Levine was. There was no doubt about it. Russell was stopped in the act of stalking his next victim's house. His set-up was interrupted by an alert potential victim who called the police and became a living witness. Just like Carol DaRonch and Nita Neary had identified Ted Bundy, so had this woman identified George Russell and perhaps saved the lives of many other potential victims.

The police pushed their investigation ahead. First, they connected Mary Ann Pohlreich to Russell through a DNA analysis of the semen that was found inside the victim's body compared with that of Russell. Then, when detectives interviewed Russell's friends, they discovered that Russell had borrowed Smitty McLain's pickup on the night of the Pohlreich murder and returned it with a foul smell inside and a red stain on the seat. Although McLain had had the truck detailed twice, with a thorough search, detectives found Pohlreich's blood on the underside of the seat cushions.

In the Beethe and Levine cases, the physical evidence was not as conclusive as in the Pohlreich case, which made the signature testimony linking all the cases that much more crucial. Detectives found hair in some underwear discovered on Carol Beethe's bedroom floor. That hair was "microscopically indistinguishable," the lab report said, from the head hair of George Russell. It remained to be determined, in linking the murders in a series, why Russell had changed his M.O., even though his signature had not changed at all.

The Pohlreich murder, it was theorized, was more like an experiment at first—a sexual assault gone wrong because the victim tried to fight him off too hard. Russell might have been surprised by what happened and what he did. Therefore, the actual murder itself might have even been a mistake because what he wanted was not what he got. In wanting to control Mary Ann Pohlreich for his own sexual gratification, Russell misjudged her ability

to resist his attacks. Then, after he'd killed her and brought her back to the Black Angus restaurant, he didn't hoist her body into the trash compactor, but instead threw police off with a different tactic. He changed his method of operation while reserving for himself the pleasure of posing, fondling, having sex with, and controlling the victim after death. He resumed his old method of breaking into homes in darkness to find his subsequent victims.

During the course of the murders, Russell stole rings belonging to Carol Beethe and Andrea Levine, consistent with the way that other serial killers steal items belonging to victims. Frequently, family members or acquaintances of the killers unknowingly end up with those items as the killer circulates them among his group to get rid of potential evidence while at the same time keeping them in sight. It's a way that killers reinvigorate themselves with the thrill without storing potentially critical evidence close to them. Detectives Skeen and Foote tracked Carol Beethe's ring to a friend Russell had tried to convince to buy it. Larry Peterson recovered Andrea Levine's ring, which had passed through several people and ended up in Florida.

Russell knew that the police would search his apartment. In a final act of bravado, he called his female roommates and had them present to police upon arrival a 1973 FBI evidence handbook. This was Russell's way of announcing his invincibility by implying, "You're not going to find anything because I know your business, too." Russell was still trying to assert control, to maintain his sense if significance, even though he knew the police were hot on his trail. But Russell was wrong. This was 1990, not 1973. His edition of the evidence handbook didn't include DNA analysis, and he did not anticipate the thoroughness of the detectives' search for evidence. At Russell's apartment, a gym bag he always carried was recovered and inside it was human head hair that was determined to belong to Andrea Levine.

The Homicide Investigation and Tracking System

The Homicide Investigation and Tracking System (HITS) helped catch George Russell. After the Mary Ann Pohlreich murder, a HITS analysis was completed to determine the rarity of the signature elements. Her murder case contained many distinctive query features for the HITS computer to match for similar factors (Keppel and Weis, April and August 1993). The murder had three unique characteristics which, when taken collectively, did not appear in any of the 2,115 murders in the HITS database (see Figure 8.6). First, posing a murder victim's body was very rare. The analysis revealed that there were only six cases in which this occurred, only 2/10 of 1% of the total cases. Second was the disposal of her body by the killer. In the research that formed the HITS database, there were three notable methods that were used by a killer to dispose of a victim's body. The most common method, 58%

of the time, was when the killer left the body in a position in which he was unconcerned whether the body was found. That usually occurred in non-display murders when the body was left in its position immediately after having fallen from the death-producing injuries. A second method of disposal, 10% of the time, was exemplified by the killer's deliberately concealing or hiding the body in some way. Leaving the body in a specific location where the body was guaranteed to be found was the third method of disposal, commonly referred to as open and displayed, and this was shown in 10% of the cases (Keppel, 1995).

The third unique feature of Mary Ann Pohlreich's murder was the evidence of sexual insertion of a foreign object. A HITS analysis revealed that there were 19 murders in which a foreign object had been inserted for sexual purposes, but the object was unknown and not found. Likewise, there were six sexual insertions of a foreign object and the object was found inserted into a body cavity. The most extraordinary finding about the characteristics of posing, sexual insertion of a foreign object, and open display of the body was that, through 1990, there were no murder victims that had all three present simultaneously except in the Pohlreich case (Keppel, 1995). To summarize the rarity of signature elements:

1. Posing of the body: six cases or 0.2%
2. Body disposal:
   a. Unconcerned: 58%
   b. Intentionally concealed the body: 10%
   c. Open and displayed: 10%
3. Sexual insertion of a foreign object
   a. Object not found inserted: 19 cases
   b. Object found inserted: six cases
4. Cases where all three were present: 0

George Russell's Appeal to the Washington Supreme Court

The following Supreme Court decisions and reasoning was taken from *State v. Russell*, 882 P.2d 747 (Wash. 1994) (Note: there has been some editing of the court's footnotes and references.) The court first had to deal with the issue of whether evidence of other crimes is relevant on the issue of identity only if the method employed in the commission of both crimes is "so unique" that proof that an accused committed one of the crimes creates a high probability that he also committed the other crimes with which he is charged. (Hernandez, at 799, Smith, 106 Wash. 2d at 777). In other words, the device used must be so unusual and distinctive as to be like a signature. (*State v. Coe*, 101 Wash. 2d 772, 777, 684 P.2d 668 (1984) (citing McCormick's Evidence § 190, at 449 (Edward W. Cleary gen. ed., 2d ed. 1972)); see also *State v. Lynch*,

58 Wn. App. 83, 88, 792 P.2d 167, review denied, 115 Wash. 2d 1020, 802 P.2d 126 (1990).

The trial court found cross-admissibility on the basis of signature and entered the following written findings based on Facts 6 and 7:

> Fact 6. Each crime bears the perpetrator's unique signature, comprised of the manner in which these women were killed, the elaborate manner in which they were posed after their deaths, and the proximity in time and place of the three murders.
>
> Fact 7. Evidence of each crime is highly probative of the identity of the murderer in each of the other crimes; the probative value of this evidence greatly outweighs its prejudice to the defendant.

The trial court also cited the opinions of two criminal investigators (Robert Keppel and John Douglas), who testified during the severance hearing that the three homicides bore the same signature and were committed by the same person.

> Russell now contends that the factors identified in finding of Fact 6 do not meet the test for signature crimes, and that no unique signature was identified by the trial court. The State counters by citing other "signature" cases in which the criminal methods were less distinctive than those employed here. See *State v. Laureano*, 101 Wash. 2d 745, 682 P.2d 889 (1984) (evidence of prior robbery admissible under ER 404(b), where crimes committed three weeks apart both involved forcible entry into family residences by three persons dressed in army fatigues (although not the same three) and where both involved firearms and similar use of a shotgun); see also Lynch (two prior robberies admissible where all crimes involved wearing a brown wig, similar time of day, a red 10-speed bicycle, display of a gun tucked in a waistband, and theft of car keys from victims); but see Hernandez, at [*68] 799 (no showing of unusual or unique manner sufficient to show identity where robber entered the store, pulled a knife, asked for money, and fled upon receiving it).
>
> We find that the factors cited by the trial court support the finding that certain evidence in this case was quite unique. Each count involved a victim killed by violent means who was then sexually assaulted and posed, naked, with the aid of props. The murders occurred within a few weeks of one another in a small geographic area. We agree with the trial court and with the expert witnesses that these similarities were not due simply to coincidence. Accordingly, we do not regard the trial court's conclusion as to cross-admissibility as an abuse of discretion.
>
> Finally, the court must weigh any prejudice to the defendant resulting from joinder against the need for judicial economy. The trial court found that apart from the evidence of signature, "a great deal of evidence, particularly from those witnesses who were acquainted with the defendant during the period

> in which these crimes were committed, would be repeated in each trial if the defendant's motion to sever Count I from the others is granted." The court thus concluded that judicial economy was served by a single trial on all counts.

Excluding pretrial motions, this case took 33 days to try. Considering our evaluation of the other severance factors, we cannot find that the prejudice resulting from joinder in this case outweighed considerations of judicial economy. Accordingly, we conclude that the trial court did not abuse its discretion in denying Russell's motion for severance.

The fourth issue the defendant raises is whether the trial court erred in admitting expert and lay testimony regarding the rarity of posed murder victims. Russell here raises several arguments regarding this testimony. We will first address Russell's contention that the expert testimony was inadmissible because the State's experts improperly relied on unproved scientific methodologies in determining that the same person committed all three murders.

At issue here are references made by John Douglas and Robert Keppel to the HITS and Violent Crime Apprehension Program (VICAP) computer programs during their testimony regarding the rarity of posing. These programs use forms filled out by local law enforcement officers listing the various characteristics of homicides in Washington and the nation, respectively. The trial court found that the expert testimony referring to HITS and VICAP did not involve novel scientific evidence and was, therefore, subject only to the requirements of ER 702.

As stated earlier, expert testimony is admissible under ER 702 if the witness qualifies as an expert and if the expert testimony would be helpful to the trier of fact. (Kalakosky, at 541; *State v. Cauthron*, 120 Wash. 2d 879, 890, 846 P.2d 502, 1993). Testimony that does not involve new methods of proof or new scientific principles from which conclusions are drawn need not be subjected to the Frye test. (*State v. Ortiz*, 119 Wash. 2d 294, 311, 831 P.2d 1060, 1992); *State v. Young*, 62 Wn. App. 895, 906, 802 P.2d 829,. 817 P.2d 412, 1991). Decisions based on ER 702 are reviewed under the abuse of discretion standard. (Kalakosky, at 541).

In the case at bar, the trial court ruled that both Keppel and Douglas were widely recognized as authorities in crime scene analysis. Both men have extensive experience in serial crime analysis and investigation. The court then found that their testimony would not involve the application of a new scientific technique and that a Frye hearing was unnecessary. Finally, the court ruled that the testimony concerning the rarity of posing would be helpful to the jury under ER 702:

> The jury does not have the specialized knowledge of how common the problem is or how often there is sexual penetration, open display of bodies, or the posing of the body after death. So I believe that it is within the scope of an

opinion of somebody's experience to indicate whether these are common or not common or unique. I would find that the relevance of the testimony, as it goes to the identity of the perpetrator, and the inference to be drawn, is that the same person committed all three homicides.

Verbatim Report on Appeal, at 2331.

We agree with the trial court that the Frye test clearly was inapplicable to the expert testimony regarding the HITS and VICAP programs. These programs are nothing more than sophisticated record-keeping systems. The court correctly analyzed the admissibility of this testimony under ER 702, and we find no abuse of discretion in the admission of the experts' testimony.

Russell also objects to this testimony on the grounds that it was statistical. Neither expert expressed his opinion about the rarity of posing in precisely quantified terms, although Douglas testified as to the number of cases on VICAP and Keppel testified as to the number of cases on HITS. Russell maintains, however, that by specifying the extent of these databases, Keppel and Douglas implicitly testified that Russell was guilty as a matter of mathematical probability.

We first note that there is no prohibition against using well-founded statistics to establish some fact that will be useful to the trier of fact. (*State v. Briggs*, 55 Wn. App. 44, 62-63, 776 P.2d 1347, 1989) [citing *People v. Collins*, 68 Cal. 2d 319, 332, 438 P.2d 33, 66 Cal. Rptr. 497, 1968]). Second, both experts relied on the databases primarily as support for the conclusion [***89] that posing is a rare occurrence and not for the conclusion that there was a statistical probability that Russell committed the murders. Finally, both experts relied more on case materials and personal expertise than on the databases in forming their opinions, and both expressed their opinions in non-quantifiable terms.

Russell next contends that the trial court erred in allowing three lay witnesses to testify about the rarity of posing and to thereby reinforce the expert testimony. In addition to Keppel and Douglas, three detectives testified that each of the bodies seemed posed and only one said he had ever seen another murder scene involving posing.

This court recently explained the appropriate conditions for admissibility of lay testimony as follows: Under Rule 701 and Rule 602, the witness must have personal knowledge of matter that forms the basis of testimony of opinion; the testimony must be based rationally upon the perception of the witness; and, of course, the opinion must be helpful to the jury (the principal test).

Ortiz, at 308-09 (citing McCormick's Evidence 29 (Edward W. Cleary gen. ed., 3d ed. 1984))

We have already concluded that the court did not abuse its discretion in finding testimony regarding the rarity of posing helpful to the trier of fact. The detectives testified regarding their personal knowledge of crime scenes and their perceptions of the three murders at issue. Although the testimony may

> have been cumulative, we do not see that its admission rises to the level of an abuse of discretion.
>
> The defense argues further that the State's expert testimony amounted to expert opinion on the ultimate question of guilt. The State points out, however, that if the testimony was improper, the defense opened the issue when it presented testimony that the murders were not related.

These arguments bring us once again to Russell's challenge that this expert testimony was improperly admitted under ER 404(b) to show identity and thus to prove that the same person committed all three murders. In the pretrial ruling the judge limited the experts by allowing them to testify only that the criminal methods employed in each case were unique and rose to the level of signature evidence. The experts were precluded from testifying that they thought that the same person committed all three crimes.

During the course of the trial, the court modified this ruling when defense counsel, during cross examination of State's expert Keppel, asked whether he knew of any other cases related to these three murders. The State objected because the line of questioning went beyond the scope permitted by the court. The court told the defense:

> You may do that. Then they have the right to come back on redirect and ask if these three cases are related, which they have not done. They have not gone into the relationship among the three cases. If you want to relate . . . the Pohlreich case to other cases, then I think in all fairness they can come back and relate the three cases to each other.

Verbatim Report on Appeal, at 5770: When the defense pursued the issue of the similarities and differences among these three murders and others, the court allowed Keppel to testify on redirect that in his opinion all of the murders were committed by the same person. Keppel based his opinion on the posing and on the facts that all the victims were nude, all were female, and all were killed within a short period of time of their contact with the offender. He also observed that each crime involved the sexual insertion of a foreign object and that the offender needed to display these victims and ensure their discovery. Russell did not raise an ER 404(b) objection to this line of testimony.

Later, the State's other expert, John Douglas, also testified that all of the victims were posed and that all of the murder scenes exhibited the same signature. Douglas based his opinion regarding signature on the facts that all of the victims had been posed in degrading and humiliating positions and on the fact that the murders occurred within a 67-day period within a small geographical area. Again, Russell raised no ER 404(b) objection but instead, in cross examination, sought to emphasize the differences between Pohlreich's murder and the other two murders. Douglas agreed that there

were differences among the crimes, but explained on redirect that the differences were insignificant compared with the similarities. "The significant part is the posing of the victims, the posing in this degrading type of position, that is critical." (Verbatim Report on Appeal, at 6042)

The defense then called Robert Gebo as an expert witness, who testified that, at one point, he had believed that the Pohlreich and Beethe murders were not connected. On cross-examination, the prosecution elicited Gebo's current opinion that all of the murders were committed by the same person. The court overruled defense counsel's objection and motion to strike, and again ruled that Gebo's testimony on direct brought the issue of whether the homicides were related onto the field of play.

In considering Russell's contention that these experts improperly gave opinions on the ultimate question of guilt, we observe that the purpose of showing identity under ER 404(b) is to demonstrate the probability that the same person committed the crime. Coe, at 777-78; Smith, 106 Wash. 2d at 778. Having found the expert testimony admissible to show identity, we will not rule inadmissible the inference to be drawn from such evidence. Moreover, the express assertions that the same person committed the three murders were invited by defense counsel. Once the defense brought up the issue of whether these crimes were related to other crimes, the court properly ruled that the State could, in turn, ask the experts whether the crimes were related to one another and had been committed by one person. See *State v. Gefeller*, 76 Wash. 2d 449, 455, 458 P.2d 17 (1969); *State v. Crenshaw*, 27 Wn. App. 326, 333, 617 P.2d 1041 (1980), aff'd, 98 Wash. 2d 789, 659 P.2d 488 (1983). We find no error in the court's ruling.

In a related argument, the defense complains that Gebo improperly based his change of opinion on the totality of the evidence against Russell, and that his testimony thus doubly invaded the province of the jury. The trial court cured any error in this regard by allowing the State to call Gebo as a rebuttal witness so that he could explain that his change of opinion was based not on information relating to Russell but on the views of his colleagues, Robert Keppel and John Douglas. The defense now claims that Gebo was lying. We have no way to assess this claim and will not consider it further.

Russell next contends that the trial court's denial of discovery of police reports from which the HITS data is drawn violated his Sixth Amendment right of confrontation. The Sixth Amendment and Const. art. 1, § 22 (amend. 10) grant criminal defendants the right to confront and cross-examine adverse witnesses. *State v. Hudlow*, 99 Wash. 2d 1, 15, 659 P.2d 514 (1983); *State v. Boast*, 87 Wash. 2d 447, 453, 553 P.2d 1322 (1976).

ER 703 governs the bases of opinion testimony given by experts: The facts or data in the particular case upon which an expert bases an opinion or inference may be those perceived by or made known to the expert at or before the hearing. If of a type reasonably relied upon by experts in

the particular field in forming opinions or inferences upon the subject, the facts or data need not be admissible into evidence. ER 705, in turn, governs the disclosure of the facts underlying an expert's opinion and provides as follows: The expert may testify in terms of opinion or inference and give reasons, therefore, without prior disclosure of the underlying facts or data, unless the judge requires otherwise. The expert may in any event be required to disclose the underlying facts or data on cross-examination.

ER 703 thus permits expert opinion testimony based on hearsay data that would be otherwise inadmissible in evidence, whereas ER 705, which is identical to Federal Rule of Evidence 705, authorizes the admission of expert opinion testimony without the prior disclosure of the facts or data [***96], which underlie the opinion. See 11 James W. Moore & Helen I. Bendix, Federal Practice § 705.10, at VII-70 (2d ed. 1976); see also Robert H. Aronson, Evidence in Washington 705-3 (2d ed. 1993) (under ER 705, trial court has discretion to require an expert to disclose the basis for opinion).

Initially the defense requested access to the HITS system and specifically disavowed any request for police reports of cases included in that system. The State offered to allow a reputable defense expert to review the data with Keppel, and Keppel reviewed the database with defense counsel for several hours. The trial court granted the defense's discovery request for forms in the relevant categories, for example, posing/unusual position, sexual insertion, ritual. After access to the HITS system was provided, the defense requested a variety of police reports referenced in HITS. The defense argues that the trial court's denial violated the confrontation clause.

Keppel himself did not have access to the actual police reports in the HITS system. The trial court reasoned that meaningful cross-examination was possible without access to the police reports by pointing out that Keppel was basing his conclusions on data interpreted by another person.

Other Washington cases have allowed the admission of expert opinion based on data interpreted by another. See *State v. Ecklund*, 30 Wn. App. 313, 318, 633 P.2d 933 (1981); *Tennant v. Roys*, 44 Wn. App. 305, 311, 722 P.2d 848 (1986). We see no abuse of discretion or violation of the confrontation clause resulting from a similar admission here. The State allowed the defense to review the same data on which Keppel relied. Keppel himself did not have access to the actual police reports that make up the databases; moreover, he did not base his opinions exclusively on the databases. We hold that Russell was not denied due process and find no abuse of discretion in the trial court's denial of discovery of the police reports underlying the HITS system.

References

Douglas, J. E. & Munn C. (Spring 1992). Violent crime scene analysis: Modus operandi, signature, and staging. *Homicide Investigation Journal.* 63–69.

Geberth, V. J. (1996). *Practical Homicide Investigation: Tactics, Procedures, and Forensic Techniques*. Boca Raton, FL: CRC Press.

Geberth, V. J. (February 1996). The staged crime scene: Things are not as they seem in some death investigations. *Law and Order*, 89–91.

Geberth, V. J. (2003). *Sex-Related Homicide and Death Investigation: Practical and Clinical Perspectives*. Boca Raton, FL: CRC Press.

Keppel, R. D. (1991, August 14). Trial transcript of the testimony of Robert D. Keppel. Seattle, WA: *State vs. George Russell.*

Keppel, R. D. (1995). Signature murders: A report of several related cases. *Journal of Forensic Sciences*. 40(4), July, 670–674.

Keppel, R. D. Unpublished report to Thomas Duffy, Senior Deputy Prosecuting Attorney, *State v. David Wayne Kunze*, Clark County, Washington Cause No. 96-1-00773-1, November 21, 2000.

Keppel, R. D. Unpublished report to Barbara Corey, Senior Deputy Prosecuting Attorney, *State of Washington v. Carol J. Carlson*, Pierce County Superior Court Cause No. 01-1-03854-2 and *State of Washington v. Daniel D. Carlson Pierce,* County Superior Court Cause No. 01-1-03853-4, February 6, 2002.

Keppel, R. D. & Birnes, W. J. (1995). *The Riverman: Ted Bundy and I Hunt the Green River Killer*. New York: Pocket Books.

Keppel, R. D. & Birnes, W. J. (1997). *Signature Killers*. New York: Pocket Books.

Keppel, R. D & Weis, J. G. (1993). HITS: Catching killers in the Northwest. *FBI Law Enforcement Bulletin*, 62(4), 14–19.

Keppel, R. D. & Weis, J. D. (1993, August). *Improving the Investigation of Violent Crime: The Homicide Investigation and Tracking System, Research in Brief*, National Institute of Justice, Washington D.C.

Keppel, R. D. & Weis, J. D. (2004). The rarity of "unusual" dispositions of victim bodies: Staging and posing. *Journal of Forensic Sciences*, 49(6), 1308–1312.

Meloy, J. R. (2002). Spousal homicide and the subsequent staging of a sexual homicide at a distant location. *Journal of Forensic Sciences*, 47(2), 395–398.

Morton, R. J. Who let the dogs out? The case of a staged homicide. Abstract Presentation at the Annual Meeting of the Academy of Forensic Sciences, 2002.

State v. Russell, 882 P.2d 747 (Wash. 1994).

What's Important Is What's Not There

9

Introduction

A Canadian killer appealed his conviction for two first-degree murder convictions. He murdered Denean Worms, age 20, in October, 1984 at Cranbrook, British Columbia. Terrence Wayne Burlingham had been convicted earlier of the first-degree murder of Brenda Hughes, age 16, committed in December 1984, also at Cranbrook. This appeal concerned only the trial and conviction for the murder of Denean Worms. At the time of the Worms appeal, Burlingham was serving his sentences of life imprisonment without eligibility for parole for 25 years on both convictions (*Regina v. Terrence Wayne Burlingham*, 1993).

The Supreme Court of Canada (1993) provided the following case information. In both murders committed only a few months apart, each victim was a young woman who had been violated sexually. Each was found naked and shot twice in the head at contact range with a .410 shotgun. Denean Worms was killed by No. 5 pellets; Brenda Hughes was killed by No. 6 pellets (*Regina v. Terrence Wayne Burlingham*, 1993). Burlingham was arrested almost immediately after Ms. Hughes was found dead. During the course of his interrogation, he confessed to the killing of Ms. Hughes and took police authorities to his parents' home, where a sawed-off .410 shotgun and some No. 6 pellet shells were found. Because the officers believed that Burlingham was also responsible for the death of Ms. Worms, they continued their interrogation. By this time, however, he had consulted a lawyer (who was not counsel at trial or on appeal), who advised him to say nothing to the police (*Regina v. Terrence Wayne Burlingham*, 1993).

As recorded through testimony, it was reported that the investigating officers made many disparaging remarks to Burlingham about his counsel during their interrogation. Among other things, they questioned the lawyer's loyalty, commented adversely on his proposed legal fees, and criticized or ridiculed his absence on a weekend. The officers suggested to Burlingham that they were more trustworthy than a lawyer (*Regina v. Terrence Wayne Burlingham*, 1993). When the officers found they were not making any headway with this approach to Burlingham's interrogation, they consulted with Crown Counsel of British Columbia, but not counsel for Burlingham, and then offered Burlingham a deal. If Burlingham would cooperate by admitting

to the Hughes murder, or by supplying physical evidence for this crime, they would reduce the charge for the death of Ms. Worms, but not for that of Ms. Hughes, to second-degree murder. The accused then made some incriminating admissions in the Hughes murder and took the police to where a second .410 shotgun, the murder weapon, was found under the ice in the Kootenay River (*Regina v. Terrence Wayne Burlingham*, 1993). Notwithstanding this "deal," Burlingham was charged with the first-degree murder of Ms. Worms. It appears that Crown counsel authorized the officers to say only that a plea of guilty to second-degree murder would be accepted, not that the accused would be charged with second-degree murder (*Regina v. Terrence Wayne Burlingham*, 1993).

The outcome of his appeal was that Burlingham was awarded a new trial on the Worms case in 1995. Significantly, the Supreme Court of Canada's rulings prevented the Crown Counsel from using Burlingham's confession to police and evidence (the .410 shotgun) derived from that confession at the new trial (*Regina v. Terrence Wayne Burlingham*, 1993). Because the police misled Burlingham, the only evidence that could be used was evidence from the crime scene and any new evidence and testimony. Therefore, before the retrial of Burlingham on one count of first-degree murder in the Worms homicide, Crown Counsel requested signature analyses of the two murders to determine if they were committed by the same person. The Crown's theory was that evidence of the killer's signature in the two murders would be considered new evidence. The analysis could not include any information about Mr. Burlingham or evidence about why he was connected to either case because a credible signature analysis cannot consider that evidence.

The Burlingham case was to be the first occasion that signature testimony would be used to link one murder to another in a Canadian court. The materials used for the Worms and Hughes murders analyses were police reports from the initial investigation of the crime scenes and victims' backgrounds, crime scene diagrams, evidence reports, crime laboratory examination reports, autopsy reports, and photographs. The following facts were examined in the analyses from the Worms and Hughes murder case files.

Details of the Murders

The Cranbrook vicinity averaged fewer than one murder per year for the 10-year period preceding 1984. In that year, however, the locale experienced two separate atypical murders within 10 kilometers of each other during a 3-month period. Brenda Hughes lived 12 blocks south and 5 blocks west of the location where Denean Worms was last seen alive.

Details of the Denean Worms Murder Case

The body of a 20-year-old white female was found on October 16, 1984, at 6:00 P.M. by target shooters at a gravel pit/shooting area outside Cranbrook (see Figure 9.1). Police investigators discovered that she was nude except for

Figure 9.1 Wooded area where the remains of victim Worms were found. (Photograph courtesy of Crown Council's Office, Vancouver, British Columbia.)

Figure 9.2 Remains of victim Denean Worms located under a tree. (Photograph courtesy of Crown Council's Office, Vancouver, British Columbia.)

white gym socks on her feet. The body was covered with a tree stump and several boards (see Figure 9.2) (Keppel, 1996).

The victim was identified as Denean Worms. She was 5 feet 3 inches tall and weighed 140 pounds. She had short, dark brown, curly hair and brown eyes. She was last seen on Wednesday, October 10, 1984, at 1:50 A.M. leaving a disco in Cranbrook, B.C. She was reported to be last seen wearing blue jeans, a white shirt and/or red vest, and running shoes. She worked at the disco as part-time cleaning staff and shared a nearby apartment with a male roommate (Keppel, 1996).

Investigators located three blood-stained areas on the ground near her body. Blood-stain pattern 1 was 7.4 meters away, blood-stain pattern 2 was 4.5 meters away, and blood stain pattern 3 was 2.7 meters away. At pattern 1, 23 shotgun pellets, six metal pieces, and five pieces of teeth were recovered (see Figure 9.3). This evidence revealed to investigators that the victim was initially shot at the location of pattern 1, and then dragged to the location where her body was found. Several kilometers away, back toward town, the victim's purse and shoes were found (Keppel, 1996).

Autopsy results indicated that Worms had been shot twice. Gunshot wound 1 through the left hand exited the planar surface and reentered the left side of her face. It was determined that gunshot 1 was the first shot fired. Gunshot wound 2 was an entry wound to the right side of the victim's head near her ear. It was coup de grace style. Both shots were fired from a .410 shotgun. There were no shotgun casings found at the scene. Multiple lineal abrasions were present over the victim's back. They were consistent with

Figure 9.3 Blood stain pattern 1 with shotgun pellets and brain matter present. (Photograph courtesy of Crown Council's Office, Vancouver, British Columbia.)

being found on a person who had been dragged over a rough irregular surface. Semen was discovered in the vaginal area (Keppel, 1996).

Murder of Brenda Hughes

Brenda Hughes was a 16-year-old white female who lived with her family in Cranbrook, B.C. She was described as being 5 feet 7 inches tall and weighing 120 pounds. She had brown hair and hazel-colored eyes. On December 30, 1984, the victim's father, mother, and brother left their home at about 10:45 A.M. She remained behind because she wanted to take a shower. The front door of the residence was left locked, but the carport entrance to the basement was left unlocked. The victim was last seen wearing pink nightclothes (Parsons, 1984).

At approximately 12:30 P.M. the family returned home from church. They entered the residence through the carport entrance, which was still unlocked. They immediately noticed blood on the head of the family's dog. The mother found the victim on the couch in the downstairs family room. The pink nightclothes that the victim was last seen wearing were found on her brother's bedroom floor. Three dollars had been taken from his wallet, which was left on the dresser in his upstairs bedroom. The mother's purse was found on top of a toilet. It had been opened and appeared to have been gone through by someone. A gray metal locking box was missing from the floor of the master bedroom closet. The father found that the victim's hair was wet, thus confirming that she had taken a shower. He noted that the volume to the stereo had been turned down, which was not normal for his daughter. He also noted that one load of wash had been done and removed from the washing machine, while another load had been washed and left in the machine (Parsons, 1984).

Blood found on the stairway walls was determined to be the victim's blood deposited by the dog's fur. There was no splatter that came directly from the victim. A dented wallboard on the stairway wall was not there prior to the murder. There was no other evidence of a struggle. A pillow that had served as a buffer between the victim's head and gun barrel was also found (see Figure 9.4) (Parsons, 1984).

The victim was found nude on the family room couch. She was face-down with her left side visible. Her head was resting against the armrest-pillow on the couch. Her left arm was bent with her hand near her shoulder. Her right hand was resting on top of her buttocks. She had sustained two gunshot wounds to the left side of her head (see Figure 9.5). Gunshot wound 1 was an entrance wound to the left ear area. Plastic wrapping, cloth wadding, and lead pellets of the shotgun shell from a .410 shotgun were found inside her head. Gunshot wound 2 was located about 2 cm above gunshot wound 1; it was near-contact in type. Lead pellets, plastic wrapping, and cloth wadding from a .410 shotgun were found inside the victim's head. There were no exit

Figure 9.4 Pillow with two shotgun holes next to each other. (Photograph courtesy of Crown Council's Office, Vancouver, British Columbia.)

wounds. As in the Worms case, no shotgun casings were found at the scene. A small fresh bruise was found at the posterior left midcalf area. Semen was found in the vaginal area (Parsons, 1984).

Signature Analyses

The following discussion summarizes the author's report to the Crown Counsel in *Regina v. Terrance Wayne Burlingham*. The main question was: What features distinguished the killer's modus operandi (M.O.) and signature? The distinction between a killer's M.O. and signature is important, particularly in these cases where the M.O. varies substantially between the first murder and the second. For example, in the Worms case, the killer picked up the victim on her way home from the bar. She was taken from public view so the killer could attack privately. But, in the Hughes case, the victim was raped and murdered in her own home. Thus the killer changed his M.O. from the first case to the second.

Whether the killer operated outdoors or indoors was an additional characteristic of his M.O. In the Worms case, the killer left the victim outdoors in an area from which he could escape without being detected. In the Hughes case, the killer appeared to feel very comfortable with a victim indoors. With that change in approach, the killer altered his M.O.

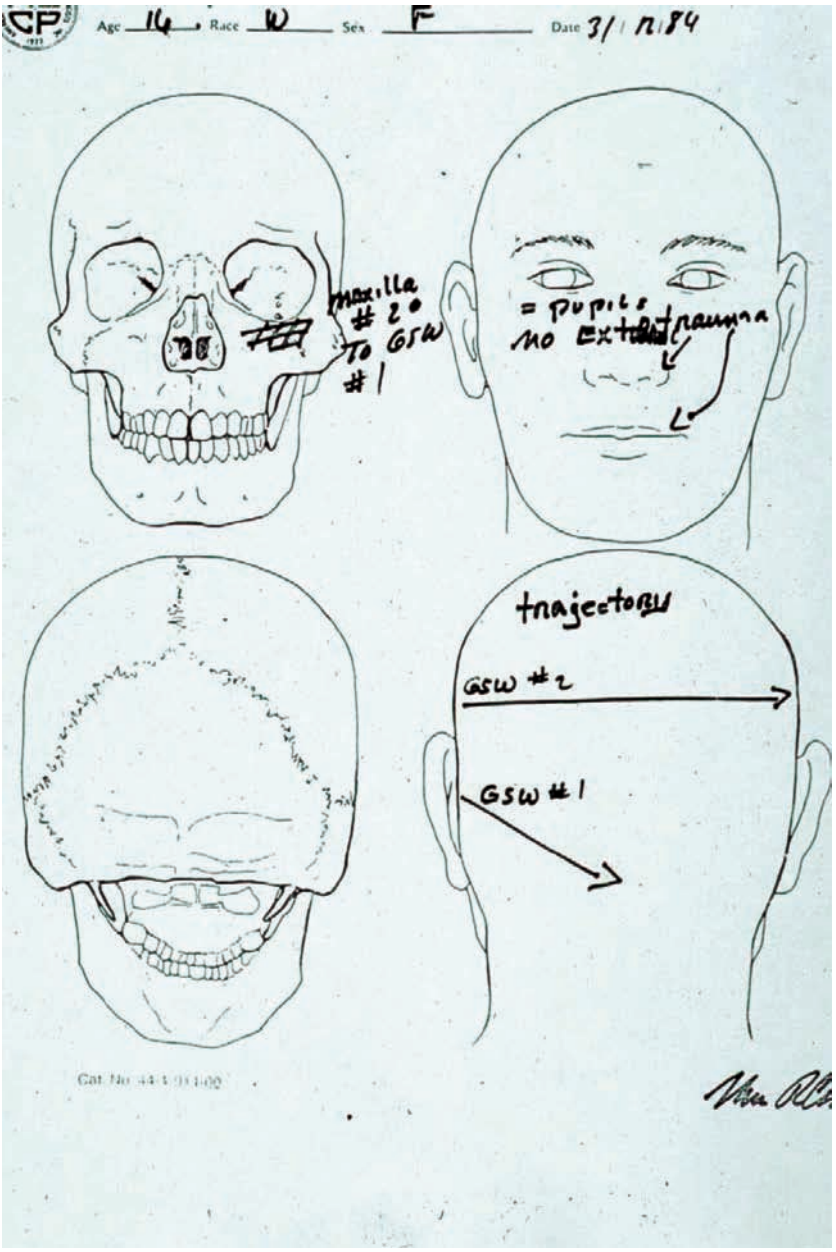


Figure 9.5 Autopsy drawings of gunshot wounds sustained by Brenda Hughes. (Courtesy of Crown Council's Office, Vancouver, British Columbia.)

Another M.O. factor was the killer's decision regarding transporting his victim from one location to another. Whereas he chose to transport Worms, he chose not to do so with the second victim. By attacking Brenda Hughes and leaving her in her own home, the killer avoided the uncomfortable and risky situation of transporting her body from her home to another location.

Rape-murderers are driven by their anger, power, or both. They need to express their emotions through control over their victims. After studying the case files of thousands of killers and interviewing many violent offenders, such as the one in these cases, the author concluded that most signature killers know they are committing a crime, but that knowledge is secondary in importance to the sexual excitement of terrorizing victims. The key to the signature in these cases was the manner in which the offender accomplished immediate and sustained domination over and terror to the victims.

The distinguishing signature of the killer in these cases is as follows:

1. In both cases, the offender demonstrated pre-planning and vast experience by his actions. Carrying any version of a sawed-off .410 shotgun is highly intimidating and terror producing. It wasn't necessary for him to carry such a power-oriented weapon when other weapons could have been used. The offender in these cases needed the terror that such a weapon, with its size and ferocity, produces, resulting in dominance over any victim. The .410 shotgun is not the weapon of choice of most killers, and certainly not of most sexually oriented murderers (Keppel, 1996). This weapon was preselected and brought to the scene of each murder. The use of a .410 shotgun to intimidate his victims was one element of this killer's signature.
2. Second, it was necessary for the killer to leave both victims nude in sexually degrading positions. The intent of the killer was to present these victims as disposable, serving no value, and as tools of ridicule. Therefore, the victims were not allowed any sense of decency by the killer. In the Worms case, the victim was left nude, thrown away like a piece of trash, covered by a stump and boards in a reasonably remote area. But she was not left as though the killer didn't ever want her found. If the killer didn't want Denean Worms' body found, he would have used more thorough and more elaborate concealment. In the Hughes case, the killer left the victim nude and prone on a sofa in her own home for relatives to discover. Leaving both bodies in positions that the finder would believe was sexually degrading and, also, demonstrating to the finder that the victims were extremely vulnerable, was a signature of this killer.
3. The absence of damage to each victim's body is vital evidence of this killer's signature. In each case, there was no evidence of a struggle, binding, strangulation, physical torture, or postmortem mutilation.

The overpowering presence of the .410 shotgun rendered both victims helpless and, therefore, demonstrated this killer's need for complete compliance without the use of other implements or assaults. Many rape-murderers do not refrain from other types of violence. The failure of Denean Worms' killer to use such violence, as evidenced by the lack of pre-fatal and postmortem wounds, is unusual. Physical assault and mayhem are common in rape-murder crimes. The unique absence of damage reflecting a struggle or torture is a signature for this type of offender. When one considers rape-murderers in general, to find no additional marks other than the death-producing injuries is exceptionally rare.

4. The placement and number of gunshots to each victim's head is a signature element of this killer. The killer chose (felt he had) to fire a second shot, although the first shot proved fatal in both cases. In addition, the near-contact and coup de grace-type wounds to the left side of each victim's head indicate this killer's need to ensure that the victims were indeed dead. The additional shot reflects force beyond what was necessary to commit the murder.

In these two control-type rape-murders, the killer acted in a way that established his highly personalized signature. My conclusion was that both victims were killed by the same killer.

HITS Data Search

Independent of the preceding analyses, a computer search was performed to determine how frequently the main characteristics of these two murders have been seen in other murders. The search was conducted in the Homicide Investigation Tracking System's (HITS) database. HITS is a central repository of homicide cases for the states of Washington and Oregon. It also contains additional murder cases from other states, from British Columbia, and from other Canadian provinces. This information is gathered from law enforcement officers and their reports (Keppel & Weis, 1999; 1994). The search was conducted on March 17, 1998. At that time, there were 5,960 murder records in the HITS database. The following results of those searches were:

Total murder records: 5,960
Female victims: 2,295
Victims left nude: 284
Major trauma to the head: 56
Weapon was a shotgun: 0

The most extraordinary finding for murders in which women were found nude, raped, and shot in the head was that, as of March 1998, no murder victims shot with a shotgun had appeared in the entire HITS database. The search findings clearly support the initial analysis that murderers who rape and murder female victims, leave them nude, and shoot them in the head with a shotgun are truly rare.

Discussion

The single most important issue for the signature killer is control. Signature killers use a specific series of actions to assume and exert control. Some take pleasure in luring the unsuspecting victim through deception to a safe place where they can establish control. Other killers need immediate confirmation that control has been established and use overpowering implements and actions to achieve it. In the Worms and Hughes cases, the killer used a sawed-off .410 shotgun to gain control. The central thread of Burlingham's signature was the imposing, and, therefore, controlling, nature of the .410 shotgun. Burlingham and a friend stole two guns 2 days before Denean Worms was murdered. One of these guns was the .410 shotgun used on Worms. Burlingham showed the shotgun to his friend a few days later, by which time the barrel had been substantially sawed off.

Eventually, Burlingham hid the shotgun in the Kootenay River. His need for that type of weapon did not diminish. In fact, it was a requirement for his next homicide. Therefore, he used another .410 shotgun at the Hughes murder scene. That particular shotgun he had stolen from another burglary of a home carried out while the people were asleep.

An interesting feature at both murder scenes was that no expended shell casings were found. Burlingham was careful at the Worms scene to retrieve the expended shotgun shell ejected from the first shotgun blast. This demonstrated an effort to not leave evidence. The second shotgun was double-barreled, so the gun did not eject the expended rounds.

Investigative follow-up work and crime laboratory analyses further corroborated the opinion that the same person committed both murders. As mentioned earlier, given the Canadian Court's ruling, if evidence was to be introduced, it would have to be new testimony unrelated to Burlingham's confession or to evidence derived from that confession. While my analysis was being performed, Crown Counsel and investigators realized that DNA testing had not been completed in 1984. So the semen samples found in both victims were tested and compared with Burlingham's DNA. Burlingham's blood sample positively linked him to the semen found inside the vaginas of both victims.

Finally, facing insurmountable new evidence against him with the signature analyses and DNA laboratory findings, Terrence Burlingham pled guilty

to the murder of Denean Worms. Signature murder testimony is yet to be offered in the Canadian judicial system.

References

Douglas, J. E., Burgess, A. W., Burgess, A. G., & Ressler, R. K. (1992). *Crime Classification Manual*. New York: Lexington Books.

Douglas, J. E. & Munn, C. (Spring 1992). Violent crime scene analysis. *Homicide Investigators Journal*, 63–69.

Keppel, R. D. & Birnes, W. J. (1995) *The Riverman: Ted Bundy and I Hunt the Green River Killer*. New York: Pocket Books, 1995.

Keppel, R. D. & Weis, J. P. (1994). Time and distance as solvability factors in murder cases. *Journal of Forensic Science,* 39(2):386–401.

Keppel, R. D., and Weis, J. P. (1999). *Murder: A Multidisciplinary Anthology of Readings.* Orlando, FL: Harcourt Brace.

Parsons, D. A. (1984). Murder File No. 84-10866, Cranbrook, BC: Royal Canadian Mounted Police.

Regina v. Terrence Wayne Burlingham, B.C.J. No. 1986, Vancouver Registry: CA006715, 1993.

Signature Left in Kansas City

10

RE: The Murders of Carol Shields and Sara Andrasek

This letter serves as my report on the above matter. The following is a history of my involvement in the case.

In October 2002, Kansas City Police Authorities contacted me about performing a modus operandi and signature analysis on the Shields and Andrasek murder cases. The purpose of the analysis was to determine if the person responsible for the murder of Carol Shields was responsible for the Sara Andrasek murder.

The materials used for the analyses were police reports from the initial investigation of the crime scenes and victims' backgrounds, crime scene diagrams, evidence reports, crime laboratory examination reports, autopsy reports, and photographs. I received those materials on November 7, 2002. The following facts were known in the Carol Shields and Sara Andrasek cases.

Carol Shields

Investigation revealed that Carol Shields left her residence Wednesday morning, September 20, 2000. She gave a friend a ride to the airport sometime after 7:00 A.M. The victim then called a co-worker shortly after 8:00 A.M. and told her she had just dropped off a friend at the airport. The victim stated that she needed to go by her boyfriend's apartment and pick up something. She said she expected to arrive at work around 9 A.M., but she never showed up.

At 8:00 P.M. Kansas City Missouri Police Officers were dispatched to the Falcon Pointe Apartments, 7918 N. Holly, Apartment 11. Upon arrival, they contacted Ricky Mathews, the victim's boyfriend, who escorted the officers to the southeast bedroom. The victim was lying on her back on the bed with no signs of life. A towel covered the victim from her neck to below her knees.

The victim was later identified as Carol Shields, a 39-year old white female, who had a 14-year-old son. She met her husband while in college, and they had been married for 19 years. The husband stated for the first few years of their marriage everything was as normal as could be, and the couple had no problems. About 5 years ago, however, he and his wife stopped having

sexual contact. He did not believe that she was having an affair. According to the husband, she would act mysteriously by being away from the house for 2 to 3 days a week, claiming she was at a girlfriend's house.

The victim worked as a manager of a nearby hotel. While employed at the hotel, she came into contact with Ricky Mathews. Originally from out of state, he was a contract employee in the fiber optics industry. He would stay at the hotel for extended periods of time. Because of their relationship, Matthews leased an apartment to prevent any conflict between Carol and the hotel management.

Carol would occasionally stay at Ricky's apartment with him and his male roommate. She had a key to the apartment and to Ricky's vehicle. She had no history of drug use or involvement in criminal activity.

The Falcon Pointe Apartments cover a large expanse with multiple-unit buildings, including three separate complexes. The apartments are adjacent to Missouri Highway 169 and are about 1/4 mile south from Kansas City Missouri North Patrol Police Station. The area surrounding the apartment complex is a predominately white, middle-class neighborhood, and is considered a low crime area.

The apartment building in which unit 11 is located is a gray and white three-story, wood-frame, multifamily dwelling. It is situated on the north side of the street facing south. A breezeway separates the individual apartments. There is no single secured entry. There are four units on each floor. Apartment 11, which is located on the northwest corner of the building, is on the second floor.

The apartment door was unlocked when the two roommates arrived home at 8:00 P.M. The victim was observed lying on her back in the northeast bedroom with her head pointing to the west and her feet pointing to the east. Her arms were straight out, 90 degrees from her sides and her legs were straight and spread wide. She was nude. Investigation revealed that the victim's boyfriend found a large bath towel diagonally on top of the victim but that her breasts were exposed. He then covered her with the towel from under her chin to below her knees. Ligature marks were present around both of her wrists and ankles.

The bedding was on the floor at the foot of the bed in a pile. Pillows were scattered on the floor near the head of the bed on the northwest side of the room. Also on the floor were two women's black shoes on the north side of the bed. A white telephone was on the floor to the south of the bed. The phone was off the hook and the cord was torn from the base of the phone. The left half of a pink bra was lying directly under the night table. The front center of the bra was cut. Also collected from the floor, directly under the table, was a small section of white plastic from an apparent trash bag. No other women's clothing was found in the bedroom. The clothing the victim

was last seen wearing had been removed from the crime scene and was still missing. No ligatures were found at the scene.

The postmortem examination revealed ligature marks around both her wrists and ankles. An abrasion was on the inside of the victim's left wrist, another on the inside of the right ankle, and one on the inside of the left ankle. Two abrasions were on the right elbow. Another abrasion was on the lower knuckle of the right thumb. The right index fingernail was broken and bloody. Another abrasion was on the left elbow. A small abrasion and a bruise were on the right knee. A linear abrasion was on the inside of the right upper calf.

A small abrasion was observed on the top of the right foot. Five small bruises were on the victim's left breast. Light bruising was observed on the upper right and left thigh. Small abrasions were on the right side of the victim's face and jaw. An abrasion was on the right side of the victim's nose and under the right eye.

The official cause of death was determined to be asphyxia. Other autopsy findings were cutaneous injuries of face and extremities, including ligature marks of wrist and ankles and pulmonary congestion and edema.

Sara Andrasek

About 9 months after the murder of Carol Shields, the body of Sara Andrasek was discovered. On Thursday, June 21, 2001, at 3:45 P.M., Richard L. Andrasek returned to the Kelly Crossing Apartments, 7889 Roanridge, Apt. A. He heard the shower running and when he went to investigate; he discovered the shower curtain open all the way. He observed his wife, Sara Andrasek, lying in the bathtub with her head underneath the water. He pulled her head back and heard air escape from her mouth. The victim was nude. The door to the apartment was found unlocked [by the victim's husband], even though Richard Andrasek had locked the front door when he went to work at 11:50 A.M.

Sara Andrasek was a 22-year-old white female. The victim's husband stated he had known her for 5 years and that they had been married for 2 1/2 years. He stated they moved into the apartment in August of 2000. The victim was 2 weeks pregnant. The victim had no history of drug use or involvement in criminal activity. The victim and her husband were very religious and she was unemployed.

The apartment house contains multiple separate buildings within the complex and is located on an outer road adjacent to Interstate 29. The apartment building at 7889 Roanridge is a tan and maroon three-story, wood frame, multifamily dwelling. The building faces north, with the parking spaces located to the east of the building. A breezeway separates the individual apartment and has no single secured entrance. The victim's apartment is located on the ground floor and the entrance door faced east. The area

surrounding the apartment complex is predominantly a white, middle-class neighborhood in what is considered a low crime area.

Investigation revealed that a garbage can was located on the kitchen floor. The trashcan was in front of an open cabinet underneath the kitchen sink. Next to the trashcan was an open roll of white plastic kitchen trash bags.

Inside the master bedroom, five shoes and some blue tissue paper were sitting on the threshold in the doorway between the master bedroom and the hallway. Just to the left of the doorway detectives observed three more shoes and some white tissue paper. A dresser was along the north wall of the bedroom. The drawers of the dresser were slightly open, and some items of clothing were sticking out of the drawers, preventing the drawers from closing. The comforter and top sheet from the bed were bunched together and sitting on the bed. No fitted or second sheet was located. The mattress pad was still on the bed and intact. With the comforter and top sheet removed, a reddish substance was visible near the middle of the mattress pad, and there was a corresponding stain on the mattress. A reddish substance was observed on the top sheet. A blue denim pouch was observed hanging from the bed post on the east side of the bed. The pouch contained condoms still in their packages and a tube of "KY" jelly. A condom wrapper was located in the trashcan that was on the east side of the bed and along the south wall. A brownish substance was observed on the floor between the bed and the windows. Two small pieces of what appeared to be parts of rubber or latex gloves were located on the floor near the foot of the bed.

The bathroom was accessible from the hallway and master bedroom. The doorway to the master bathroom from the master bedroom was blocked by a stereo, which appeared to have been there for some time. Detectives observed water on the floor in the bathroom as well as a rolled-up green rug. A red t-shirt was rolled up inside the green rug. Toiletries on the inside wall of the bathtub were upright and appeared to be undisturbed. The victim was lying in the bathtub, naked, with her hands behind her back. Her head was resting on the southeast corner of the bathtub. Her legs were folded underneath her body. A substance believed to be blood was observed on the bottom of the tub, seeping toward the drain. The victim's hair was matted down and contained some type of substance. Ligature marks were around her neck and both wrists. No ligatures were located. A small piece of rope was observed sticking out of the bathtub drain. A white substance was observed around her mouth. Hairs and fibers were observed on the victim's face. A wad of chewed gum was located in the trashcan in the bathroom.

The postmortem examination revealed ligature marks around the victim's neck and both wrists. The evidence of ligature strangulation was a liga-

ture furrow with abrasion and encircling mark, petechial hemorrhages of face and conjunctivae, and visceral congestion.

Two small lacerations were on the inside of the victim's right thigh, a small laceration was on the inside of the victim's right wrist, and there were symmetrical injuries of the upper extremities and thighs and abrasions of the anal verge and introitus.

Modus Operandi

Modus operandi (M.O.) refers to the way in which a particular criminal operates. The characteristics of a person's "M.O." can change from one crime scene to the next as the killer gains experience. For example, M.O. factors may include the time of day, day of the week, age of the victim, and race of the victim, among others.

In these cases, the M.O. changed from one murder to the next. The ages of the victims varied, ranging from 39 to 22 years old. In addition, the killer chose different apartment houses and different days of the week to strike.

Signature Analyses

The main question is: What features distinguished the killer's signature? A killer's signature refers to actions the killer takes that are above and beyond what's necessary to commit a murder. The elements of a killer's signature remain consistent throughout his murders and do not change.

The first signature feature was the manner in which the killer attained total control over both victims through minor contact, demonstrated by bruising and abrasions. Carol Shields had minor abrasions about the face and ligature lines around her wrists and ankles. Sara Andrasek had minor abrasions on her upper arms and thigh, a contusion on the back of her head, and ligature lines around her wrists. These injuries suggest that the victims were not initially compliant. To accomplish total compliance, the killer probably displayed an intimidating weapon, such as a knife. He then controlled the victims long enough to secure bindings around their wrists, and in the case of Carol Shields, also around her ankles. Neither victim exhibited any defense wounds in her struggle with the killer, such as those commonly found when a person is struck by a stabbing or bludgeoning weapon.

The second signature characteristic is the posing and open display of both victims and leaving them in sexually degrading and submissive positions. The fact that the killer made no attempt to conceal his victims, but left them in places where he knew they would eventually be found is a significant part of this killer's signature. The crimes were not over when the victims

died. The killer felt a need to manipulate how the victims were found. He left Carol Shields in a sexually degrading and submissive position, nude on the bed, face up with arms straight out from her sides, legs spread and a large towel place diagonally over her, but exposing her breasts. He left Sara Andrasek in a sexually degrading and submissive position, placing her nude body in the bathtub and turning the water on.

The third signature characteristic is the killer's pathological satisfaction from bondage. Bondage is the ritualized practice of compression and incapacitation of a person with the use of ropes, chains, handcuffs, strangulation, suffocation, drowning, and a number of improvised methods conditional only to the limits of the killer's imagination. The act of bondage has an almost built-in guarantee of control by rendering a victim motionless to the degree of restraint provided by the implements. Each victim had marks on her wrists (and, in the case of Carol Shields, around her ankles as well), indicating that they were bound at one time. The binding devices were taken off both victims and removed from the scene. Although the killer bruised his victims, bondage was most important because it became a method of control and restraint, torture, and then asphyxiation. The cause of death for Carol Shields was asphyxiation; for Sara Andrasek, it was ligature strangulation. The killer's need to complete his bondage was highlighted by his hands-on asphyxiation and strangulation to cease the victim's breathing. Bondage was an adjunct to his torture and sexual dominance–submission signature, and it was the central focus leading to power and control for these murders.

The final signature characteristic is that, in both cases, the killer demonstrated planning and vast experience by his actions. The killer stalked and preselected these victims to know that they would be in the apartments alone. Even more indicative of planning is that the killer had his own murder kit. The weapon to maintain control and the binding devices were brought to the scene by the killer. In addition, when the killer left the scene, he took care to remove binding devices and took them and the weapon with him.

In summary, for these two control-type rape-murders, the killer acted in a way that established his highly personalized signature. When the four main signature features are considered collectively, a truly rare series of murders is identified. My conclusion is that the same person killed Carol Shields and Sara Andrasek.

Signature of an Arson-Rape-Murderer 11

Introduction—The Shoreline Murders

The Shoreline district lies north of the city limits of Seattle in unincorporated King County, Washington. An apartment complex is on a cul-de-sac in the 19700 block of 22nd Avenue Northeast, in an area called Ballinger Terrace. The neighborhood consists of a shopping mall on the north made up of small to mid-sized businesses, convenience shops, and stores near the King/Snohomish County line. The immediate area of the murders consists of multifamily dwellings, apartments, and some single-family homes (see Figure 11.1). The Ballinger Terrace area does not have many murders within a year. In the last year, the neighborhood experienced the average variety of crimes and one murder of a male victim. But within 30 days, the locale experienced two separate, atypical murders within the same apartment complex. Before trial, members of the King County Prosecutor's Office, Seattle, Washington, requested that a signature analysis be completed on the two murders. Their main question was: *Were both murders committed by the same person?* The analysis did not include any information about the murderer or evidence about why a specific individual might be connected to either case.

Renee Powell

The following information about Renee Powell was taken from the original homicide investigation file (Keppel, 2000; 2003). Renee Powell had relocated from St. Louis to Seattle. As a registered nurse, she was employed by several hospital facilities in the area. Powell was described as a 43-year-old white female, 5 feet 4 1/2 inches tall, with a small build and weighing 100 pounds. She had no criminal record and had not previously been a crime victim.

Renee Powell was last seen alive at approximately 7:30 P.M. on February 24, 1995. Previously, she had driven to a nearby Albertson's Supermarket to purchase some cigarettes, a newspaper, and some ice. Police investigation revealed that upon returning to her apartment at 2228 NE 197th Place, Apartment B, she had sufficient time to make a jar of iced tea. In addition, it was discovered that Renee was doing laundry in the building's laundry room, which was adjacent to her lower apartment unit. The apartment structure was a two-story residence containing four units.

Figure 11.1 Aerial photograph of the apartment complex in Ballinger Terrace where both victims were murdered. (Photograph courtesy of King County Prosecutor's Office, Seattle, Washington.)

No one would see Renee Powell again until firemen discovered her charred remains inside her apartment shortly after midnight on February 25th.

At about 11:50 P.M., neighbors reported a fire in Renee Powell's apartment. By 12:40 A.M., the firemen had put out the fire and discovered Renee Powell's body. They discovered that she was bound, gagged, and constrained by a ligature. Homicide detectives from the King County Police were called. The investigation revealed that Renee Powell probably heard a noise at the front door of her apartment because the killer had broken her door open. She probably had no time to respond. The victim was discovered face down on the floor of her bedroom with a bookshelf pulled down and lying on top of her body. The killer appeared to have stripped her naked from the waist down and then torn her shirt from her body. Her bra remained fairly intact, pushed up, and exposing her breasts. Her left arm was bound with an electrical cord, which was cut from a study lamp later found in her bedroom.

Arson investigators determined that separate and distinct fires had been started around the residence. The fires did not connect with each other. The first one was started in the master bedroom near the victim's body. The second began in the living room next to the fireplace.

The autopsy examination discovered that Renee Powell had sustained two stab wounds. One was in the right abdomen and stomach; the other was

Figure 11.2 Electrical cord and garments tied around victim's neck. (Photograph courtesy of King County Prosecutor's Office, Seattle, Washington.)

in her left back in the parasacral muscle. The gag in her mouth was an elastic bra, tied tightly and fastened in the back with a double overhand knot (see Figure 11.2). The medical examiner removed a segment of electrical cord from around the victim's left forearm and outside of the shirt. The loops were tied with a complicated set of overhand knots. The plug end of the cord was present, and the other end appeared cut.

The presence of conjunctival petechiae indicated that there was probably asphyxia. The victim's body was more badly burned in the front than in the back. There was no soot found in the throat; therefore, death occurred before the fires. Renee Powell had been vaginally raped, and semen was preserved as evidence.

Investigation revealed that the killer had stolen items from the apartment that included an overcoat, a dress, a VCR, several bottles of wine, a duffle bag, and some frozen meat.

Barbara Walsh

The information about Barbara Walsh was taken from the original homicide investigation case file (Keppel, 2000; 2003). Barbara Walsh was a 54-year-old white female who lived alone. She had been widowed more than 20 years ago

and never remarried. In the weeks before her death, she had not developed any significant relationships. Barbara Walsh lived in a lower unit of the same apartment complex in which Renee Powell's body had been found. Walsh worked as a receptionist at Group Health Hospital.

Thirty days after the murder of Renee Powell, at about 10:30 P.M., a neighbor saw Barbara Walsh returning from the laundry room of their fourplex. Walsh lived at 2202 NE 197th Place, Apartment B, which is about 100 yards northwest of Renee Powell's apartment. Unlike Powell's one-door apartment, Barbara Walsh's had a front door and a back sliding door that opened to a common patio and a wooded area. Her sliding door could not be unlocked from the outside, so police investigators surmised that during one of Barbara's trips down to the laundry room, the killer slipped inside the unlocked front door.

At about 1:06 A.M. the following morning, neighbors reported smelling smoke and discovered a fire in progress in Barbara Walsh's apartment unit. Fire personnel extinguished the fire and discovered the body of Barbara Walsh. They could see that she was face down, bound, and gagged with a ligature. She was found on the floor of her bedroom with her head next to the foot of her bed. She was nude except for her shirt, which was shoved up nearly to her neck. Multiple fires had been set within the apartment. In the bathroom, between the sink cabinetry and a throw rug, a Trojan condom wrapper was located. Having found a knife in Barbara Walsh's kitchen, electrical cords from lamps, and her tights from drawers and in her laundry, the killer had prepared himself for his night's work.

The autopsy report stated that Barbara Walsh was gagged with three pairs of tights, tan (innermost), white (overlain over the tan), and green (overlain over the white). The tan and white tights circled circumferentially around the back of the head once. The green tights circled once through the mouth and once around the anterior aspect of the neck at approximately the level of the thyroid prominence. All of the crotch regions of the tights are located anteriorly. The white tights are knotted once in the midline posterior region and once around the green tights, slightly left of midline. Approximately 11 inches away is another knot in the green tights through which is threaded a yellow electrical cord. Located next to the male adapter of the cord, the pathologist found several strands of blue yarn.

Police discovered that similar blue yarn was also tied to the bedstead, as if the victim had been tied to the bed at one point. Of note was a knife found in the kitchen that police believe the killer used on the victim. The knife had a 7-inch blade attached to a 4-inch handle (see Figure 11.3). All items and materials used by the killer belonged to the victim. Several items were taken from the victim's residence. Those items included a television set, VCR, CD player, wicker baskets, a box of silverware, Raggedy Ann and Andy figures, miniature red wire, old-fashioned bicycles, a glass prism, and small polished

Figure 11.3 Knife found on the kitchen floor in Barbara Walsh's apartment. (Photograph courtesy of King County Prosecutor's Office, Seattle, Washington.)

stones. On the victim's left wrist was a ligature that was extensively burned and consisted of multiple types of wires. There was a 9 ½- inch length of black insulated wire, incompletely burnt through and attached by a few strands to a portion of yellow-tan insulated wire. The yellow-tan wire, from a lamp in the residence, was wrapped and knotted circumferentially around her wrist. The knot was located on the lateral aspect. One portion of the wire completely encircled the thumb.

Walsh sustained three stab wounds clustered on the right side of her abdomen. The wounds were gaping and extensively charred around the edges. Near this cluster of wounds was a solitary stab wound. All of the stab wounds proceeded from right to left without appreciable upward or front-to-back deviation.

In summary, the pathologist stated that Barbara Walsh died as a result of ligature strangulation by the stocking, which also served as a gag. In addition, an electrical cord was present on her left wrist and multiple abdominal stab wounds were identified, which produced injuries insufficient to account for her death. The thermal injuries were incurred after death and no soot was present in her throat.

Signature of Robert Parker

In these sexually perverted murders, the killer's approach to the victims and his selection of the locations were preparatory to his rapes and murders, allowing him to protect his identity, ensure success, and facilitate escape. Therefore, evidence left as a direct result of carrying out his signature was far more revealing of the killer's nature than his M.O.

In testimony at a hearing over the separation of the two murder charges of first-degree murder, the characteristics of binding, stab wounds, disposition of the body, arson, and souvenir taking were described as features of the killer's signature in the Shoreline murders (Cahan & Raz, 1997; Keppel, 1997):

1. The act of binding was present in both murders. The killer used binding materials found at the scenes. Binding materials were not brought to each scene by the killer. The use of electrical cord and the ligatures exceeded the necessary violence to control the victims for rape-murder. The electrical cord binding and loops around both victims were the specific and necessary control devices that the killer had to use at each crime scene. Typically, these types of arm bindings are used by killers who prance the victim around (much like a dog on a leash) and poke them with a knife, thereby evoking terror and satisfying the killer's anger.
2. The number of stabbing strokes was necessary for this killer and increased from the first murder to the second. The killer stabbed Renee Powell, the first victim, twice, and, 30 days later, inflicted four stab wounds on Barbara Walsh, the second victim.
3. The disposition of both victims' bodies reflected this killer's personal feelings. The killer had to leave the victims in sexually degrading and submissive positions. Both were essentially nude from the neck down and intentionally placed face down. The killer purposefully left the victims so they would be found.
4. The taking of souvenirs enabled this killer to relive the event at some future time. Such thievery was crucial to this killer's needs. Psychologically, the killer regards these victims as "bitches"; therefore, he justifies his thefts.
5. The presence of arson was evidence of another form of violence inflicted by the killer. The arson fires were a product of refinement and learning. There were more fires set at the second murder scene. Setting fires at the crotch of both victims was totally unnecessary but was an act to which this killer felt compelled.

In summary, as this killer proceeded from one victim to the next, his true picqueristic signature evolved. More stab wounds, more percussive activity

with the body, and more fires allowed this killer to feel more attached to his victims and vent his anger. These factors led to the conclusion that the two victims were killed by the same person (Keppel, 1997).

Defense Expert's Opinion

A declaration of Gregg O. McCrary was filed in King County Superior Court (McCrary, 1998). The conclusion reached by Mr. McCrary was the same as the prosecution's expert, that both murders were committed by the same person, albeit from a different perspective. McCrary's declaration is as follows:

> The purpose of victimology is to place the victim on a risk continuum (from low to moderate to high) and is accomplished by examining two general areas: (1) the victim's lifestyle and (2) situational variables present at the time the crime was committed. An example of an individual whose lifestyle would place her at a high risk for becoming a victim of a violent crime would be a prostitute who stole money from her clients, held money from her pimp, or stole drugs from a drug dealer, and so on. An example of a low-risk individual would be a woman not involved in a criminal lifestyle, and who was home alone in a relatively safe environment when murdered. Situational variables would include varying circumstances that tend to either elevate or lower the potential for becoming the victim of a violent crime. An example of a situational variable that would elevate one's potential for becoming the victim of violence would be to walk around a high-crime area of a city alone, late at night.
>
> In this case, it appears that both Renee Powell and Barbara Walsh were at low risk for becoming the victim of a violence crime, both in their lifestyle and in their environment. There is no evidence that these victims knew the offender or that the victims were friends with each other or spent time together.
>
> It is more probable than not that this offender preselected these victims for attack. In this case, the women were killed in the fourplex apartments with a common laundry. There is some evidence that both women either had just completed or were in the process of completing their laundry. In all likelihood the offender took whatever time was necessary to ensure that the environment in which he attacked these women was safe for him to do so. It is most likely that the offender's pre-offense behavior involved a good deal of "peeping and prowling" around that complex in order to identify potential victims. Such victim preselection may also have involved "daytime" intrusions or break-ins. The offender's purpose is to ensure that the potential victim lived alone and that there would be no obstacle such as a male presence or perhaps a large dog that would complicate the assault. The offender wants an environment that is low risk for him and high risk for the victim.
>
> It is more probable than not that this offender has a prior history of sexually violent behavior that likely included use of restraints or bondage-type activity. He is also likely to have a history of nuisance-type arsons. The type of interpersonal violence displayed in these crime scenes devolves over time. Opposed

> to some popular myths, no one just "snaps" and commits this type of crime. It is exceedingly unlikely that an individual with no history of sexual violence or arson would either decide to or be able to commit these crimes. The amount of time spent at the scene is consistent with an individual who is comfortable around dead bodies, comfortable in that environment, and familiar with fire setting. When under stress, the universal tendency is to revert to those things with which one is most comfortable. So it is with murderers. At the murder scene the offender is under a good deal of stress, and, therefore, the choices he makes at that scene will reflect not only those behaviors that are rewarding to him, but also those with which he is the most comfortable and familiar.
>
> On the basis of the geographical, temporal, and behavioral commonalities shared by these two crimes and crime scenes, it is most probable that the same offender committed them. It would be exceedingly rare to have two different individuals committing this same type of crime in the same neighborhood at the same time.

HITS Statistical Analysis

The Homicide Investigation and Tracking System (HITS) in the Washington State Attorney General's Office is a central repository of murder and sexual assault information in the state of Washington. The HITS program is a database with 227-query capabilities (Keppel & Weis, 1993). Prior to a hearing on the separation of charges, a statistical analysis was performed to determine the relative frequency of the signature characteristics in the Powell and Walsh murders.

At the beginning of the analysis, there were 5,788 murder cases in the HITS program. The first search revealed that there had been 1,164 cases in which the body recovery site was the victim's home. Of those cases, 90 victims were discovered bound in some way. Taking those 90 victims, 49 cases were found in which trophies or significant items were removed by the killer(s). In those 49 cases, 16 victims received stabbing or cutting wounds. When those 16 victims were checked, only two victims, Powell and Walsh, were found burned. The rarity of these characteristics was significant to the killer's signature and to the prosecution.

Catching the Killer

Detective follow-up work and crime laboratory analyses further corroborated the opinion that these two murders were committed by the same person. Robert Parker lived across the street from the woods that overlooked the apartment complex where Renee Powell and Barbara Walsh lived. Police detectives contacted Parker's residence during the initial canvas, but the residence was in the name of his girlfriend. Parker was contacted at the residence,

but he provided a false name. Parker's residence was only 130 feet from Barbara Walsh's home and 150 yards from the home of Renee Powell. Parker was known to go out for long periods alone at night without explanation.

In late October 1996, detectives were contacted by a therapist. The therapist was treating a woman by the name of Princess Gray, who was Parker's roommate. The therapist told police that her client had information about murders that occurred in the Shoreline area.

On November 1, 1996, detectives contacted Princess Gray in the King County Jail. Gray had been charged and booked for assault and reckless endangerment and was awaiting trial. Gray told detectives that Parker told her two white guys were involved in the first lady's murder and Parker had stolen Renee Powell's property from them.

She related that on the night of the murder, Parker brought home a VCR, eight or nine bottles of wine, and freezer food that included pork chops. He also had a container with $30 to $40 in change. Gray said that on the second case, Parker left and came back with a TV, VCR, and CD player. Parker also brought home some spices. Gray was asked if Parker brought home any trinkets. She said "Yes, things you set on your table." Detectives subsequently recovered most items from Gray's residence. They also recovered Powell's duffle bag from Parker's residence at the time of his arrest for the murders. Inside the duffle bag's pocket were polished stones that Walsh was known to collect. Killers frequently remove items belonging to their victims as souvenirs or for monetary gain. Parker's retention of stolen items found in the possession of Princess Gray and himself contributed to the evidence against him in these cases.

More specific evidence linking Parker to both murders was discovered. From semen found on Powell's vaginal swabs, investigators requested that DNA analysis be performed and compared with Parker's DNA. It was found to be a match.

In addition, in the Walsh case, hair was found on the bathroom counter. The hair was protected from the fire by a towel on top of it. A DNA analysis performed on the hair and compared with Parker's DNA, and another match was discovered (see Figure 11.4).

For the experienced homicide detective, linking murder cases by distinguishing between a killer's M.O. and his or her signature should not be difficult. What is problematic is that the elements of the signature, at times, can be hidden because of decomposition of the remains or contamination of the crime scene, or both. The two scenes in the Shoreline cases were contaminated by fire, but the early discovery of the fire prevented more destruction of evidence that would have possibly hidden the killer's signature elements. Robert Parker was convicted of two counts of aggravated first-degree murder in the murders of Barbara Walsh and Renee Powell (Hopkins, 1999).

Figure 11.4 The bathroom sink area where the hair was found in Barbara Walsh's residence. (Photograph courtesy of King County Prosecutor's Office, Seattle, Washington.)

References

Cahan, R. & Raz, D. (1997, September 19). Letter to Howard Phillips, Ann Mahony, and Marcus Naylor, Seattle, WA: *State v. Robert Parker*.

Hopkins, J. (1999, February 26). Man convicted of killing two women. Seattle, WA: *Seattle Post-Intelligencer*.

Keppel, R. D. (1997, November 14). Trial transcript of the testimony of Robert D. Keppel. Seattle, WA: *State vs. Robert Parker*.

Keppel, R. D. (2000). Investigation of the serial offender: Linking cases through modus operandi and signature. In: Schlesinger, J., Ed. *Serial Offenders: Current Thought, Recent Findings*. Boca Raton, FL: CRC Press.

Keppel, R. D. (2003). Serial offenders: Linking cases by modus operandi and signature. In: James, S. H. & Nordby, J. J., Eds. *Forensic Science: An Introduction to Scientific and Investigative Techniques*. Boca Raton, FL: CRC Press.

Keppel R. D. & Weis, J. G. (1993, August). Improving the Investigation of Violent Crime: The Homicide Investigation Tracking System. National Institute of Justice, *Research in Brief*.

McCrary, G. O. (1998, October). Declaration of Gregg O. McCrary, Seattle, WA: *State v. Robert Parker.*

The Definitive Signature of a Rapist and Murderer

12

Introduction

The power-assertive rape-murderer is the type of offender who usually begins with a series of rapes, and, at some point in the rape series, may kill. For this type of offender, the rape is planned, whereas the murder is an unplanned response of increasing aggression to ensure control of the victim. The acts within the rape-assault are characterized by forceful aggression and intimidation. Specific to the expression of virility, mastery, and dominance, a direct and overpowering assault is necessary and often results in multiple antemortem rapes of the victim (Keppel & Walter, 1999).

For the murder itself, the central issue becomes one of maintaining control over a vulnerable victim by an exaggerated machismo overreaction. To quickly overcome a victim's resistance, the killer may say, "You don't want to get hurt. Just give up." Characteristically, the killer demonstrates mastery by taking charge or command by the use of an assertive image and dominating violence. For the individual killer, the finality of the killing ensures the success of the killer's power and control through the elimination of the threat posed by the victim and the secrecy of the performed acts. Because of the satisfaction that the rape-murder gives the killer, he analyzes, plans, and seeks methods to improve his aggressive and masculine image in his everyday life and in times of murder (Keppel & Walter, 1999).

In the crimes associated with Wesley Miller, there were five rape victims; his final victim he murdered. Miller's crimes show the classic signature of the power-assertive rape-murderer. The details of those crimes are as follows:

January 23, 1981 (Rape)

At about 6:50 P.M., Susan Brown, a 17-year-old white female and Castleberry High School cheerleader, answered a telephone call; the caller asked if "Ed" was there. She stated that she said no and he hung up. Her father is named Ed and was listed in the telephone book as Ed Brown. The victim's home was located at 4408 Canyon Trail, Lake Worth, Texas. While she was talking on the phone with her sister, she heard the door open and close. She looked around and a man was standing in the entrance area. He wore no shoes, no shirt, and faded jeans, which were unzipped. He had a stocking pulled over

his head—he had no mask but the stocking distorted his features and she was not able to make out his face (Johnson, 1981).

The victim immediately started screaming … he told her (repeatedly in a low voice), "Shut up" (she said his tone made her feel as if she was going to be hurt). He advanced toward her and struck her hard in the face with his fist. Hard enough that she flew back off her feet onto her back … he immediately advanced and started ripping off her bloomers (uniform tights under her short cheerleading skirt), stockings, and panties … he did not tear them but he was grabbing and she was fighting him and screaming. She broke away from him and started running, through the kitchen and into the dining room—he cut her off. He grabbed her and literally pulled her up, while he ripped off her bloomers, panties, and hose. A struggle ensued and he dragged her to an area behind the sofa, between the sofa and near a little table on the floor. She was on her back—she was menstruating; he had jerked her pad off with her panties. He was on top of her and trying to penetrate her, but he did not get an erection. She didn't know if that had repulsed him or the fact that she began continually praying, saying, "Please God protect me, please God don't let him make me pregnant, please bring an angel and protect me" (repeating, over and over). Her prayer was quiet and near his ear. He put his hands all over her and his penis was very small. After further questioning, the victim revealed that the suspect may have ejaculated because she found what she thought was semen on her (Johnson, 1981).

When the suspect could not get his penis to stay in—or go in—she was unsure—he got up. He told her in a low voice, "Turn over." She continued to pray and he again told her to "turn over" in the same voice and tone. She complied. He said, "Don't come after me." He briskly walked out the front door … she lay on the floor and watched him walk out with her face sideways on the floor (Johnson, 1981).

Susan Brown stated that her most pointed memory was of the marked odor. She stated it was not sweet; not cologne, not sweat or usual BO … but it was a body odor. It was not the smell of sex or musk—but it was a bit musky somehow. She said she has often thought of how to describe it, but still cannot put her finger on the smell—but it was arid and different from any other smell before or since (Johnson, 1981).

After the man exited, she ran to the door and locked it. She peeked out the front window and saw that a car was parked in front of the vacant lot next to her house. She saw taillights … there was a row of three on each—the car was dark. The car left following the curve in the road which would get you out. She thought he must have known the area, otherwise someone would have been afraid that the road was a dead end or circle right back to the house (Johnson, 1981).

The victim said she had the feeling during the assault that she was *going to be killed*. She then called her sister and then the police … after reviewing

vehicle books later she thought the car might have been a 1979 through 1981 Buick Regal just from her memory of the taillights (Johnson, 1981).

Susan Brown described the suspect as a white male, 5 foot 8 to 5 foot 10 inches in height, weighing 140 to 150 pounds, with broad shoulders, stocky build, and wearing no shirt, no belt, no shoes, and Wrangler blue denim pants (Johnson, 1981).

November 11, 1981 (Rape)

The Vosberg family members had departed the residence at 209 Rancho Drive, Saginaw, Texas, for school or work by 8:15 A.M. At about 8:20 A.M., the victim, Lynn Vosberg, a 19-year-old white female, was awakened by the telephone ringing in her room, a listed number but different from the other family telephone. A male voice asked for a fictitious person. The person hung up when told no one by that name lived there. Within 2 minutes, the family telephone rang. The victim got out of bed to answer that telephone. The same male voice asked for another unknown person. The victim replied negative and the caller hung up. As the victim returned to bed, her telephone rang again and the male subject asked for another person. The victim answered that no one by that name was there and hung up (Adcock, 1981).

The victim dozed off to sleep for a few minutes, and then woke to find a white male subject kneeling by her bed, taking the phone off the hook and pulling the wire from the wall. The victim asked, "What are you doing?" He said, "I'm going to fuck you." ("I'm fixin' to fuck you.") He grabbed the victim and pushed her down on the bed, stating, "If you don't keep quiet and take your clothes off, I'm going to hurt you." The victim pleaded with the suspect to leave her alone and struggled. He pulled off her nightshirt, bra, and panties and threw them at the foot of the bed on the floor. The suspect used his left hand to fondle victim's breasts and nursed them. He looked at the victim's pubic area and told her "You have a fine looking pussy." At times, when he nursed her breasts too hard, causing pain, when the victim reacted, he would stop. He asked her to perform oral sex on him. He said, "You're going to suck me aren't you?" He placed his penis in her mouth and she gagged. She said his penis was small. He attempted to have the victim kiss him by him pulling his mask up under his nose. When the victim would not kiss him, he spit in her face. He kept asking her name, looked at her diamond earrings, and fondled her ears. He made no attempt to remove them (Adcock, 1981).

The suspect held the victim on the bed by holding her arms, and forced her legs apart with his knees. While holding the victim, he looked at her pubic area. He told her he had been following her for some time. After the suspect entered the victim's vagina with his penis, he asked the victim, "Are you a

virgin?" She stated, "Yes." He said, "I don't believe you." He asked, "Have you ever been 'commed up'?" Then he stated, "I'm going to come inside you." After the completion of the rape (ejaculation), the suspect told the victim to roll over on her stomach and not move, and he was going to look through the house. He said, "Don't tell anybody. I know where you live, and I'll be back." The victim heard the sliding door leading to the patio open. And she ran to her parents' room and locked the door (Adcock, 1981).

She described the suspect as a white male, early to mid-20s, 5 feet 4 to 5 feet 6 inches tall, muscular build, mid-length brown hair, mustache (full lip, neatly trimmed), brown hose over his head, and dressed in a white athletic shirt, with green stripes around sleeves. He had a brown stocking across his face (Adcock, 1981).

December 7, 1981 (Rape)

Lisa Tichnor (Gabbert), an 18-year-old white female, was at her home located at 705 Club Oak, River Oaks, Texas on December 7, 1981, at about 11:15 A.M. She had worked late, getting off at midnight, and she had slept late. Her mother had a degenerative disease that caused her to die about 2 years after the sexual assault. That day her mother was in the den in her usual chair with a telephone nearby. They had a housekeeper, who was predictable in her routine. She arrived each day at the same time, and went to the grocery store the same day of the week at the same time. At that time, her mother was lucid but was sometimes disoriented. Unable to move on her own, she had to be assisted to move from one place to another (Hicks, 1981).

Lisa Tichnor was asleep, and the door from the carport to the kitchen opened. An unknown male entered wearing a red mask (not like maroon, but red like a poppy color) with a hose (nylon) over the mask. She thought it was a friend pulling a prank and called the friend's name (like, "What are you doing here like that?") (Hicks, 1981).

The suspect then leapt on her in the bed and started choking her with both hands around her neck. She was attempting to push him off with both hands against his upper body (kind of near his shoulder area). He opened her robe (she was wearing a robe and panties). He did not rip it or tear it. They were kind of wrestling in one continual action. He looked to the side of the bed and pushed her over the edge to the floor between the bed and the wall (Hicks, 1981).

He started to take off her panties, and then he stopped. In a low whispery voice he told her to take off her own panties (exact wording unsure, not specifically notable). She had been resisting until this, at this time … she asked, "Where's my mother?' He replied, "She's in there … I promise if you do what I say I won't hurt you" (he knew her mother was in the den and the voice was

continually the same as before). She removed her own panties and became more submissive to get it over without endangering her mother. He then bent his head down—slightly lifting the bottom part of his mask—but due to the angle of his head she could not see, even his chin, and began licking her breasts (no biting, just licking—recollection was that there was no physical pain) (Hicks, 1981).

She observed his shirt with was a woven knit-like mix of blue and white with dark blue ribbing. His jeans were regular but faded from washing—not starched. Her observation of his arms was that they were muscular but not too large (Hicks, 1981).

He undid his pants and pulled them down without standing. He kind of held himself over her with his arm. He attempted penetration but had no erection. His penis was not large—it was even kind of small. He finally achieved penetration. He asked, "Wrap your legs around me," while he was inside and again using the low whispery voice. He finished his ejaculation (Hicks, 1981).

The suspect said to her, again in the same voice, "Roll over." She said, "No." (She stated she was afraid to turn her back on him because she thought he would then kill her and her mother.) He said, "I promise I won't hurt you." Finally, she complied, he pulled his pants up (she only heard the action did not see him do this), and he left the bedroom. Shortly afterward, she ran after him in time to observe him walk past her mother and heard him go out the carport door (Hicks, 1981).

The victim ran to the front door to see the direction he left (there was nobody there) and then to the edge of the carport, and she observed him walking on the other side of a fence in their yard across toward the back of the vacant lot—briskly (Hicks, 1981).

The victim returned to the house because she didn't know what to do and she was in her robe. She asked her mother, "Did you see who that was?" Her mother said she saw someone leave and seemed inquisitive. She told her mother it had been a friend pulling a prank—to avoid alarming her mother (Hicks, 1981).

The victim called a friend; they called a police officer with whom they were familiar and one who knew all the students at the school. They then went to the hospital. Tichnor described the rapist as a white male, 17 to 20 years old, 5 foot 7 to 5 foot 8 inches tall 170 to 175 pounds, wearing a red ski mask with a stocking pulled over it; she said he had on a light blue T-shirt with dark blue trim and blue jeans and that he had dark brown hair and a dark complexion (Hicks, 1981).

A tennis shoe impression was found at the scene (same as the one found at the Stratton scene) (Hicks, 1981).

December 8, 1981, 11:00 A.M. (Rape)

On December 8, 1981, between 11:00 and 11:20 A.M., Selina McDonnell, a 20-year-old white female, was at her home, located at 204 Club Oak, River Oaks, Texas. The victim stated she was taking a shower and had placed her bra and panties on, exited the bathroom, and was walking across her bedroom to open the closet and get dressed. When she opened the closet an individual jumped out of the closet with a ski mask over his head, and only a T-shirt on. The T-shirt smelled liked stale body odor; as if it had been sweated on, then placed in a gym bag … removed later and worn. The suspect pushed her to the floor. He removed her panties as soon as he jumped out of the closet. He dragged the victim across the floor to the end of the bed, where he grabbed a roll of white medical tape that was sitting on a speaker next to the door. He wrapped it around her head and over her eyes so she could not see. The suspect then put her on the bed. He penetrated her vagina with his penis. The assailant did experience an orgasm in the victim. She asked him not to hurt her and he answered by saying he would not hurt her if she cooperated with him. After he climaxed, he taped her legs and arms together. He said, "Don't get up until you hear the door shut. I am leaving now." She heard the front door slam. The tape roll was removed from the premises. The tape had not been in her room prior to the assault (Griffen, 1981).

McDonnell described him as a white male, 5 feet 7 to 5 feet 8 inches tall, weighing 170 to one 180 pounds, with very dark arm and leg hair. The red mask had no eye or mouth holes (Griffen, 1981).

January 14, 1982 (Rape)

On January 14, 1982, Deborah Orman was at a Sansom Park, Texas laundromat, washing her clothes. She began carrying cleaned clothes to her car. She noticed a man dialing the pay telephone and watching her. He approached her and forced her down to the floor of the laundromat. At this point, the man told her he was going to hurt her, and she urinated on herself. He said that if she stayed down, he wouldn't hurt her. She asked him not to hurt her and he said he wouldn't. But she continued to struggle with him. She almost broke free but he pulled her back down to the floor. He pulled her back toward the sink area. He told her to remove her clothes near the sink area. He did not have weapons. The victim tried to talk to him, but he ripped her dress off and pulled down her pantyhose. The man pulled her hair and pinned her wrists down. He penetrated her vaginally with his erect penis. He told her to "stay laying down" and he would not hurt her. He then walked to the front door and came back and had a 20-inch stick and a blue bottle cap. He tried to penetrate her with a bleach cap lid. Then he left. The hospital personnel found that there was sperm present on the sample taken from the

victim. The crime laboratory examination found seminal fluid in the vaginal specimen (Haenes & Holmes, 1982).

The victim described the suspect as a white male, 17 to 19 years old, 5 feet 6 inches, 175 pounds, with dark brown mustache, dark brown hair feathered to collar length, and wearing a blue T-shirt and blue jeans (Haenes & Holmes, 1982).

January 21, 1982 (Murder)

On January 21, 1982, Retha Stratton was stabbed to death at her residence, located at 1808 Brook Hollow Drive, Fort Worth, Texas. She sustained thirty-eight stab and cut wounds with four penetrating stab wounds to her heart. Eleven of those stab wounds were in the victim's neck (Timmons, 1982).

Amy King and the victim were roommates and rented the residence together. King arrived home at about 6:00 P.M. and observed that no lights were on. She observed the front door standing slightly ajar. She turned on a light switch and lamp and saw blood splattered on the wall by the lamp. She ran next door to get her sister and reentered the house, noting blood streaked across the living room floor that led into Retha Stratton's bedroom. Retha Stratton was found nude on her back with her legs spread inside the entrance to the bedroom closet. She had a knife stuck in her chest. Her panties were found stuffed in her mouth (Timmons, 1982).

Considered by police to be the top suspect in this murder, Wesley Wayne Miller was confronted and confessed to stabbing Stratton (Timmons, 1982). The victim's blood, type A positive, was found on the suspect's jeans, right tennis shoe, and the left shoe lace. No seminal fluid was detected on vaginal, oral, or rectal samples. A shoe imprint at the scene was the same type as that found at the rape of Lisa Tichnor.

Signature Analysis

The following discussion summarizes the offender's signature, independent of physical evidence and suspect statements. The main question was: What features distinguished the offender's signature?

In the cases of the River Oaks crimes, the offender demonstrated planning in his method of operation across all six crimes. In chronological order, they were the rapes of Susan Brown (1–23–81), Lynn Vosberg (11–11–81), Lisa Tichnor (12–7–81), Selina McDonnell (12–8–81), and Deborah Orman (1–14–82), and the murder of Retha Stratton (1–21–82).

The highly specialized non-ritualistic behaviors in these six cases consisted of (1) specialized victim selection, (2) intimidating approach, (3) aggressive clothing removal, (4) coopting victims' compliance by threats

and assault, (5) the rapist undoing his own clothing, (6) the need for sexual intercourse and/or substitute sexual activity, (7) giving the victims verbally intimidating commands and/or language, and (8) leaving victims in sexually degrading positions.

Specialized Victim Selection

This rapist consistently selected the same type of victims throughout his crimes. His victims were within the 18- to 22-year-old age range and involved in the cheerleading scene in the River Oaks area. In addition, his modus operandi was to attack victims in indoor locations. The suspect preselected each victim and the location where the rape would take place. All of the six rapes were committed at indoor locations. This choice demonstrated the rapist's comfort level with his approaches to victims and egress from the crime scenes.

Surprising and Intimidating Approach to Victims

The acts within the rape-assault are characterized by forceful aggression and intimidation in order to accomplish absolute control and immediate domination. By wearing a stocking or mask covering his face with the first four victims, the suspect was an intimidating figure. He approached each of the rape victims with an element of surprise, going toward each one and assaulting them by striking, choking, or pulling them down before they had time to realize what was going on.

Aggressive Clothing Removal

With each victim, the suspect removed victims' clothing by pulling off, ripping, or tearing. In the rape of Susan Brown, he ripped off her bloomers; with victim Vosberg, he pulled off her nightshirt, bra, and panties; with victim Tichnor, he started to take her panties off, but asked her to; with victim McDonnell, he removed her panties; and with victim Orman, he ripped her dress off.

Co-Opting Victims' Compliance by Threats and Assault

In the case of victim Brown, he punched her in the face with his fist and told her to shut up; with victim Vosberg he threatened to hurt her if she was not quiet; with victim Tichnor, the suspect choked her and said he would not hurt her if she did what he said; with victim McDonnell, he immediately pushed her to the floor and taped her eyes; and with victim Orman, the suspect told her he would not hurt her if she stayed down.

The Rapist Undoing His Own Clothing

With all victims of rape, the offender either had his pants off or undid his own clothing. In no case did he have the victim undress him.

The Need for Sexual Intercourse or Substitute Sexual Activity

With each rape victim, the suspect had to penetrate the victim's vagina with his penis and ejaculate. In addition, in the case of victim Orman, he tried to force a bottle lid into the victim's vagina. With murder victim Stratton, he forced her panties into her mouth and left the knife in her chest as a symbol of sexual penetration. This rape-murderer expressed himself through the percussive action of penetration with his penis or a knife.

Giving the Victims Verbal Intimidating Commands or Language

With each victim, the suspect had some conversation that benefited his need for intimidation:

With victim Brown: he commanded her to "shut up" and "turn over."
With victim Vosberg: he said, "I'm going to fuck you." "If you don't keep quiet and take your clothes off, I'm going to hurt you." "You're going to suck me aren't you?" "Have you ever been commed up?" "Are you a virgin?"
With victim Tichnor: he said, "Wrap your legs around me." "I promise if you do what I say, I won't hurt you." "Roll over."
With victim McDonnell: he said, "I will not hurt you, if you cooperate." "Don't get up until you hear the door shut, I'm leaving now."
With victim Orman: he told her "stay laying down" and he would not hurt her.

Victims Left in Sexually Degrading Positions

All victims were left in sexually degrading positions. In no crime did the offender allow the victims to get dressed before he left. Victims Brown and Vosberg were told to roll over. With victim Tichnor, the suspect pulled his pants up and left the bedroom. In the case of victim McDonnell, he taped her legs together while she was nude. And with victim Orman, the suspect left her on the floor of the laundromat after he tried to place a bottle cap in her vagina and then he ran out. In the case of murder victim Stratton, she was left in the open and displayed, face up, legs spread, and nude except for a garment pushed up over her breasts.

Murder Case

In this series of sexual acts, the five rapes were all planned in order to assure control over the victims. In the murder of Retha Stratton, the murder was an unplanned response of increasing aggression to ensure control of the victim of a rape and the central issue became one of maintaining control over a vulnerable victim by an exaggerated machismo overreaction. The murderer of Stratton inflicted thirty-eight stabbing and cutting wounds, eleven of which were stab wounds to the neck. The victim sustained four stab wounds to the chest, any one of which could have been fatal, and the knife was left in the chest. All of these stab wounds exemplify overkill.

A concentration of eleven stab wounds to the neck, the panties stuffed in the victim's mouth, and the knife left in the victim's chest are all examples of secondary sexual mechanisms. The offender was getting a greater charge than with his previous use of primary sexual behaviors in the rapes. This behavior evolved through the first four rapes and the employment of a secondary sexual mechanism (bottle cap) in the fifth rape. In the sixth sexual crime, the murder of Retha Stratton, he used secondary sexual mechanisms. The offender left the victim in a sexually degrading position with a knife in her chest and her legs spread.

In summary, for these power-assertive control-type rapes and murder, the offender acted in a way that established his highly personalized signature. The final conclusion was that all five rapes and the murder were committed by the same person.

References

Adcock, J. (1981, November 11). Investigative File on Rape 81-F-346. Saginaw, TX: City of Saginaw Police Department.

Griffen, B. D. (1981, December 8). Investigative File on Rape 81-229-IB-2. River Oaks, TX: City of River Oaks Police Department.

Haenes, J. R. & Holmes, W. H. (1982, January 14). Offense Report on Rape 82-C-013. Sansom Park, TX: Sansom Park Police Department.

Hicks, R. (1981, December 7). Investigative File on Rape 81-228-IB-1. River Oaks, TX: City of River Oaks Police Department.

Johnson, C. L. (1981, January 23). Investigative File on Criminal Attempt Rape 81-C-036. Lake Worth, TX: City of Lake Worth Police Department.

Keppel, R. D. & Walter, R. (1999). Profiling killers: a revised classification model for understanding sexual murder. *International Journal of Offender Therapy and Comparative Criminology*, 43(4), 417–437.

Timmons, C. D. (1982, January 21). Murder Case File of Retha Stratton 82-024251. Fort Worth, TX: Fort Worth Police Department.

Best Practices in Linking Cases

13

1. Recommend considering the frequency of similar homicide cases throughout a region.
2. Use modus operandi (M.O.), ritualistic, and non-ritualistic behaviors to link cases.
3. Determine the central theme among linked cases
4. For ritualistic behaviors, use the rarity of each factor as a first step in using each behavior in the final signature determination.
5. Combine ritualistic and non-ritualistic features to determine the rarity of identifying a grouping of characteristics as a signature element.
6. Heed the intent of the known words of the killer.
7. Obtain the entire homicide file for each incident.
8. State the final signature in terms of a summary that identifies a central theme to the series and those factors or constructs that make up that central theme.

Court Testimony Regarding Linking Cases

Hazelwood and Warren (2004) reported that testimony regarding the signature of a crime series has been presented in the courtroom to enhance legal arguments that a series of crimes was committed by the same offender. For example, this type of testimony was offered and involved the opinion that the same person was responsible for a series of six rapes (*California v. Kenneth Bogard*, 1996). In New Jersey, the Supreme Court reviewed similar testimony and allowed the expert to testify regarding similarities across a series of offenses, but did not allow the expert to offer an opinion as to whether the crimes had been committed by the same person (*State of New Jersey v. Fortini*, 2000). In a different context, testimony regarding a review of the signature aspect of two homicides was offered by the prosecution at a hearing to determine if they would be joined for prosecution (*South Dakota v. Robert L. Anderson*, 1998). Similar to the qualification of all expert witnesses, the analyst offering this type of testimony must be qualified through education and experience, with the final decision regarding the reliability and probative value of the testimony's being determined by the judge, and eventually by the jury.

Linking testimony of murder cases has been admitted at trial and upheld under appellate scrutiny in the United States numerous times. Those adjudicated cases are *State of Louisiana v. Nathaniel Code* (1994), *State of Delaware v. Steven Pennell* (1989), *State of California v. Cleophus Prince* (1992), and *State of Washington v. George Russell* (1994). Also, in *State of Washington v. Robert Parker* (Keppel, 2000), the court refused to permit a required separation of charges in a pre-trial hearing. This decision was based in part on signature murder testimony about two linked murders.

Rissinger and Loop (2000) believe that criminal profilers, such as Roy Hazelwood, and M.O. and signature analysts might be given a legitimate role in the trial, but only on the shortest and most carefully constructed judicial leash designed to eliminate or substantially reduce the dangers of his testimony. And from whence spring those dangers? From Hazelwood's unjustified shamanistic, unrealistically accurate image, carefully fostered by himself, the FBI as an institution, and the popular media, which is virtually certain to be shared by most if not all of the jury, and from his non-blind role as a person constructing evidence with an eye to "putting the prosecution over the top"…. But, if from the beginning everyone knew that, in every jurisdiction, the rules that should apply to admissible testimony are:

1. Unless the witness made reference to some objectively maintained database for estimates of the rarity of characteristics of the crimes claimed to be linked in this case, such a witness could only testify as a subjective experience-based educational witness.
2. Such a witness would not be allowed to reveal his "profiler credentials" to the jury beyond saying that he had worked for many years for the FBI (or other organization) as a specialist in the investigation of sexually driven crimes such as rape and sexual homicide, and that in the course of his career, both through research and through involvement in actual cases, he or she had seen the details of many cases.
3. Such a witness would testify only in regard to characteristics that in his experience were truly rare in the type of crime involved. In the case of the disorganized blitz attacks involved in *Fortini*, this would seem to be limited to the facial or chin biting, since the literature indicates that the biting of breasts and insertion of objects in the anus is relatively common in this kind of attack.
4. In general, the witness's means of expression should make it clear that any assertion of rarity makes no claim to statistical precision.
5. Most importantly, conclusions must be the result of a controlled and masked process by which the witness is not presented with any information relevant to the claimed experiential expertise (such as the forensic odontologists report in *Fortini*). Any episodes presented

> for the witness's consideration must be arranged so that the witness must look at the charged crime first, and while looking only at the details of the charged crime, identify whatever characteristics are in fact unusual for that type of crime. Only when the witness has committed to this list should he or she be allowed to see assertedly related crimes.

Information derived in this manner and presented to the jury with these limitations would actually add specialized knowledge of base rates in a way that might be reliable and helpful (Risinger & Loop, 2000).

References

California v. Kenneth Bogard (1996, February). California Supreme Court hearing in San Diego.

Hazelwood, R. R. & Warren, J. I. (2004). Linkage analysis, modus operandi, ritual, signature and sexual crime. *Aggression in Violent Behaviour*, 9, 307–318.

Keppel, R. D. (2000). Investigation of the serial offender: Linking cases through modus operandi and signature. In Schlesinger, L. B., Ed. *Serial Offenders: Current Thought, Recent Findings*. Boca Raton, FL: CRC Press.

People v. Collins 438 P.2d 33 (Cal. 1968).

Risinger, D. M. & Loop, J. L. (2000). Three Card Monte, Monty Hall, modus operandi and "offender profiling": Some lessons of modern cognitive science for the law of evidence. *Cardoza Law Review*, 24, 1.

South Dakota v. Robert L. Anderson. (1998, April 9). McCook County Court Preliminary Hearing.

State of California v. Cleophus Prince (1992). 9 CAL.App.4th 1176, 10 CAL.Rptr.2D 855.

State of Delaware v. Steven B. Pennell (1989). Del.Super., 584 A.2d 513.

State of Louisiana v. Nathaniel Code (1994). 627 So.2d 1373.

State of New Jersey v. Fortini (2000). 745 A.2d 509 (N.J.)

State of Washington v. George W. Russell (1994). 125 Wash.2d 24, 882 P.2D 747 (1994).

Index

A

Andrasek, Sara, 199–202
Anger
  anger-retaliatory offender, 9, 10, 113–115, 166
  indicators, 142, 151–152
  rape-murderer motivation, 192
Appeals and challenges, 98–99, 150–153, 177–183, 185–186, *See also* Courtroom testimony and arguments
Arson murders, 71–76, 88–89, 203–212
Atcherley, L. W., 2–3

B

Bathtub murder scene, 199–201, 202
Beethe, Carol, 168–170, 173, 175–176
Bellevue area murders, 164–183
Bindings and bondage, 8
  "Clairemont Killer" case, 132–133
  Cottingham case, 66–67, 74, 77, 80–81, 89–90
  Kansas City unsolved strangulation murders, 199, 200, 202
  "Lonely Hearts Killer," 17, 19
  Pennell case, 140, 142, 151, 152, 156
  Shoreline arson-rape murders, 203–208
  Spencer rape-murders, 99–100, 102, 105, 107–108, 111, 114–115
  victim vocalizations and, 156
Blood type evidence, 71, 104, 109, 110, 111, 219
Breast mutilation, 51, 58, 76, 92
  bites, 69, 71, 74, 75, 91, 143, 149, 157
  nipple mutilation, 74, 141, 149, 152
  picquerism, 121, 124, 127, 130–131, 133–134
Bridgeman, Shirley, 16–18
British Columbia shotgun rape-murders, 185–195, *See also* Burlingham, Terrence Wayne
Brooks, Pierce, 15–16, 20–22
Brown, Susan, 213–215
Buchanan, Iantha, 28–30, 31
Bundy, Theodore Robert, 17, 78, 80, 132, 155, 168, 175
Burlingham, Terrence Wayne, 185–195
  DNA evidence, 194
  HITS analysis, 193–194
  legal appeals, 185–186
  signature and M.O. analysis, 190–193
  victims and crime scenes, 186–190

C

Canadian rape-murder case, 185–195, *See also* Burlingham, Terrence Wayne
Carlson, Lisa, 160–163
Carr, Maryann, 66–67, 84, 86–88
Case linking, *See* Linking cases
Cat burglar rape-murderer, 97–116, *See also* Spencer, Timothy
Chapman, Annie, 45–47, 55, 56, 57, 58, 59, 61
Chicago area murders, 22–23
Child rape-murder, 22
Cho, Diane, 105–107, 109–110, 112, 114, 116
"Clairemont Killer" case, 119–137, *See also* Prince, Cleophus, Jr.
Clark, Pamela and Amber, 129–131, 136
Classified ads, 18
Code, Nathaniel, 139
Coles, Frances, 54, 56, 59
Communication level of crime linkage, 1
Condom use evidence, 5
Confessions, 20–21, 97
Cottingham, Richard, 65–95
  apprehension, 78
  courtroom arguments for case similarity, 85–88
  headless torsos, 71–74
  Hotel Seville murders, 75–76
  interrogation, 78–82
  physical evidence against, 83–85
  signature and M.O. analysis, 88–95
  souvenirs, 83–84, 92, 94
  victims, 66–78
Courtroom testimony and arguments, 223–225, *See also* Appeals and challenges

Cottingham case, 85–88
Pennell case, 150–153
Russell case, 177–183
Cranbrook rape-murders, 185–195, *See also* Burlingham, Terrence Wayne
Crime linkage, *See* Linking cases
Crime scene assessment, 1, *See also* Signature analysis
Jack the Ripper murders, 39, 54–62
Crime scene staging, 159–163

D

DaRonch, Carol, 175
Davis, Debbie Dudley, 99–101, 109, 112, 114, 116
Decoy operation, 145–146
Defecation obsession, 23
Defense use of case linkage, 97–98
Degnan, Suzanne, 22
Delaware serial murders, 139–158
Denning, Edward, 78
Dietz, Park E., 31
DiMauro, Catherine Ann, 143–145, 150, 157
DNA evidence, 5, 97–99, 104, 109, 110, 111–112, 136, 175, 194, 211
Douglas, John, 139, 150–152, 179, 181, 182
Doyle, Sir Arthur Conan, 23–24
Drugging of victims, 67–68, 70, 89–90

E

Eddowes, Catherine, 48–50, 55, 56, 57, 58, 59, 61
Ellis, Shirley Annette, 139–143, 157
Escalation of violence, 7, 31–32, 58, 157, *See also* Overkill
Texas rape-murderer case, 213–222
Expert level of crime linkage, 1
Expert opinion testimony issues, 177–183, 223–225, *See also* Courtroom testimony and arguments

F

Fernandez, Tony, 159
Finner, Margaret, 150
"First Floor Rapist," 6
Foreign object insertion, 26, 32, 169, 170, 172, 177
Fort Worth area rape-murderer, 213–222, *See also* Miller, Wesley
Frampton, Morris, 24–36
apprehension and physical evidence, 32–36
case description, 25–30
signature and M.O. analysis, 30–32
Frye test, 179, 180

G

Geberth, Vernon, 7, 65, 116, 119, 143, 157
Gebo, Robert, 182
Geiger, Susan, 69–71, 81–82, 86, 87
Genital mutilation, 44, 46–47, 49, 53, 57, *See also* Breast mutilation
foreign object insertion, 26, 32, 169, 170, 172, 177
Glatman, Harvey, 16–22
Goodzari, Deedah, 71–74, 84
Gordon, Michelle Ann, 147–149, 157

H

Hansen, Richard, 69
Hazelwood, Roy, 224
Headless torso cases, 53–54, 71–74
Heirens, William, 22–23
Hellams, Susan, 101–104, 112, 116
Holmes, Sherlock, 23–24
Homicide Investigation Tracking System (HITS), 1
Burlingham rape-murder, 193–194
courtroom admissibility issues, 179–180
Russell rape-murders, 176–177
Shoreline arson-rape murders, 210
Whitechapel murders, 59–61
Hotel Seville murders, 75–76
Hughes, Brenda, 185–186, 189–190, 191

I

Impulsive sexual offender, 9
Insertion of foreign objects, 26, 32, 169, 170, 172, 177
Interrogation of serial killers, 20, 78–82

J

Jack the Ripper murders, 39–63
background, 40–41
HITS analysis, 59–61
signature and M.O. analysis, 39–40, 54–63
victims, 41–54

K

Kansas City unsolved murders, 197–202
Keller, Elissa, 126–129
Kelly, Mary Jane, 50–51, 55, 56–57, 58, 59, 61
Keppel, Robert, 179, 181, 182, 183

L

Levine, Andrea, 170–171, 173, 174, 175
Lie detector, 20
Ligature binding, *See* Bindings and bondage
Ligature strangulation, *See* Strangulation
Linking cases, *See also* Modus operandi; Signature analysis; *specific cases*
  best practices, 223
  common crime characteristics (table), 11
  comparing ritualistic behaviors, 4
  Cottingham case, courtroom arguments, 85–88
  defense applications, 97–98
  historical perspective, 2–4
  HITS analysis, *See* Homicide Investigation Tracking System
  inter-jurisdictional communication, 24
  Jack the Ripper murders, 54–62
  levels of analysis, 1–2
  non-ritualistic characteristics and, 9–10
  signature evidence admissibility issues, 4, 150–153, 177–184
"Lipstick Murderer," 22–23
London area murders, *See* Jack the Ripper murders
"Lonely Hearts Killer," 16–22
Los Angeles area murders, 16–22

M

Madonna Complex, 93
McCrary, Gregg O., 209–210
McDonnell, Selina, 218
McKenzie, Alice, 52–53, 56, 59
Mercado, Ruth, 18–19
Method of operation, *See* Modus operandi
Meyer, Kathleen Anne, 146–147
Miller, Wesley, 213–222
  murder, 219, 222
  rapes, 213–219
  signature and M.O. analysis, 219–222
M.O., *See* Modus operandi
Mobility of serial killers, 139, 151
Modus operandi (M.O.), 55, *See also specific killers or cases*
  assessing M.O. and ritual, 8–9
  best practices in linking cases, 223
  changes and development of, 3, 5–6, 15
  defense use, 97–98
  definition, 3–5
  historical perspective, 2–4
  legal criteria, 4
  methodology for analysis, 4
  primary purposes, 5
  signature vs., 11, 55, 152, 190, 211
  Spencer rape-murders, 111–112
  unsolved K.C. strangulation murders (2000), 201
  Whitechapel murders, 55–57
Murder kits, 81, 90, 153
Mylett, Rose, 51–52, 56, 59

N

Neary, Nita, 175
Neighborhood familiarity of serial killers, 81, 135
New York City/New Jersey area murders, 65–95, *See also* Cottingham, Richard
Nichols, Mary Ann, 43–44, 55, 56, 57, 61

O

O'Dell, Leslie Ann, 76–78, 80, 86, 94
Orman, Deborah, 218–219
Overkill, 142–143
  Frampton case (Seattle, 1977), 30–32, 36
  Jack the Ripper signature, 58
  Miller case (Fort Worth, 1982), 222
  Pennell case (Delaware, 1987–1988), 142–143
  Russell case (Seattle area, 1990), 169–170

P

Parker, Robert
  apprehension and physical evidence, 210–211
  defense expert's opinion, 209–210
  HITS analysis, 210
  signature analysis, 208–209
  victims and crime scenes, 203–207
Pennell, Steven, 139–158
  apprehension and physical evidence, 150
  police decoy operation, 145–146

police surveillance, 149
signature and M.O. analysis, 153–157
signature and profile testimony, 150–153
victims and crime scenes, 139–150
Photographs of victims (killers'), 17, 19, 20–21
Picquerism, 133
"Clairemont Killer" case, 119, 120, 123–124, 127, 130–131, 132–134
Cottingham case, 91–92
definition, 119
Jack the Ripper murders, 42–43, 57
Pennell case, 156–157
Shoreline arson-rape murders, 208–209
Spencer case (penetration using penis), 114, 116
Plea bargaining, 185–186
Pohlreich, Mary Ann, 164–168, 173, 175–177
Police decoy operation, 145–146
Police misconduct, 185–186
Polygraph, 20
Posing, 159, 164
"Clairemont Killer" case, 120, 122, 130, 132
foreign object insertion, 169, 170, 172, 177
Frampton case (Seattle, 1977), 29, 31
frequency of similar cases, 176–177, 179–180
HITS analysis, 176
Jack the Ripper signature, 58, 61
Kansas City unsolved strangulation murders (2000), 198, 201
Killer's photographs (L.A. area, 1958), 17, 19, 21
Pennell case (Delaware, 1988), 144
Russell case (Seattle area, 1990), 164–173
Russell case, challenge to signature testimony, 177–183
Spencer cases (Virginia, 1987), 115–116
Wesley Miller case (Fort Worth, 1982), 221
Powell, Renee, 203–205, 209
Power-assertive sexual offender, 9–10, 213–222
Prince, Cleophus, Jr., 119–137
apprehension and physical evidence, 135–137
DNA evidence, 136
signature and M.O. analysis, 131–134
victims and crime scenes, 119–131
Profiling, 1
courtroom admissibility issues, 224
methodology, 4
Pennell case, 150
Prostitute murders
Cottingham case (1977–1980), 65–95, *See also* Cottingham, Richard
Frampton case (1977), 24–36, *See also* Frampton, Morris
Pennell case (1987–1988), 139–150, *See also* Pennell, Steven
police decoy operation, 145–146
Whitechapel (1888–1891), 39–63, *See also* Jack the Ripper murders
"Punishment" motivations, 86, 90–91, 93, *See also* Anger

R

Race, 28, 31
Ransacking, staged, 161–163
Rape-murder
B.C. shotgun murders, 185–195, *See also* Burlingham, Terrence Wayne
of child, 22
"Clairemont Killer" case, 119–136
escalation, Wesley Miller case, 213–222, *See also* Miller, Wesley
George Russell case, 164–173, *See also* Russell, George
"Lipstick Murderer," 22–23
"Lonely Hearts Killer," 16–22
"Shoreline" arson cases, 203–212, *See also* Parker, Robert
"Southside Slayer," 97–116, *See also* Spencer, Timothy
Reyner, Jean, 84
Ritualistic behavior, 7–8, *See also* Bindings and bondage; Picquerism; Posing
assessing M.O. and ritual, 8–9
consistency of, 15
impulsive sexual offenders and, 9
methodology for linking cases, 4
Russell, George, 139, 164–183
apprehension and physical evidence, 174–176
challenge to the signature testimony, 177–183
HITS analysis, 176–177
signature analysis, 171–174
victims and crime scenes, 164–171

S

San Diego area rape-murders, 119–137, *See also* Prince, Cleophus, Jr.
Schilt, Karen, 67–69, 86
Schultz, Tiffany, 119–121
Scripting victims speech, 8
Seattle area murders
  Carlson murder scene staging, 160–163
  Frampton case, 24–36
  Russell case, 164–183
  Shoreline arson-rape cases, 203–212
Semen or sperm evidence, 5, 71, 100–101, 102, 104, 106, 108–109, 110, 111, 124, 133, 136, 175, 189, 190, 194, 205, 211
Sexual bondage, *See* Bindings and bondage
Sexual foreign object insertion, 26, 32, 169, 170, 172, 177
Sexually degrading positioning, *See* Posing
Sexually sadistic murderers
  Morris Frampton (Seattle, 1977), 24–36
  Richard Cottingham (New York/New Jersey, 1977–1980), 65–95
  Steven Pennell (Delaware, 1987–1988), 139–158
Shields, Carol, 197–199, 201, 202
Shoreline arson-rape murders, 203–212, *See also* Parker, Robert
Shotgun rape-murders, 185–195, *See also* Burlingham, Terrence Wayne
Signature, 10–11
  early criminology, 3
  evidence admissibility issues, 4, 150–153, 177–183, 223–225
  M.O. vs., 11, 55, 152, 190, 211
Signature analysis
  best practices in linking cases, 223
  "Clairemont Killer" case (San Diego, 1990), 131–134
  comparing ritualistic behaviors, 4
  Cottingham case (NY/NJ, 1977–1980), 88–95
  Cranbrook shotgun rape-murders (B.C., 1984), 190–193
  Frampton case (Seattle, 1977), 30–32
  Kansas City area unsolved strangulation murders, 201–202
  methodology, 4
  Miller rape and murder case (Texas, 1981–1982), 219–222
  Parker arson rape-murders (Seattle, 1995), 203, 208–209
  Pennell case (Delaware, 1987–1988), 153–157
  Spencer case (Virginia, 1987), 112–116
  Whitechapel murders (London, 1888–1891), 39, 54, 57–59, 62–63
Smith, Emma Elizabeth, 41–42, 56, 59
South Park Marina murder, 25–28
"Southside Slayer," 97–116, *See also* Spencer, Timothy
Souvenirs or trophies, 83–84, 92, 94, 176, 208, 211
Spencer, Timothy, 97–116
  apprehension and physical evidence, 106–107
  connecting to murders, 109–110
  convictions upheld on appeal, 98–99
  DNA evidence, 97–99, 104, 109, 110, 111–112
  M.O., 111–112
  signature analysis, 112–116
  victims and crime scenes, 99–109
Staging, 159–163
Strangulation, 66–67, 75, 90, 99, 100, 102, 105, 107–108, 111, 114–116, 140, 141, 142, 145, 156, 166, 173, 199, 200, 202, 205, 207
Stratton, Retha, 219
Street, Valerie Ann, 67, 74–75, 87
Stride, Elizabeth Gustafsdotter, 47–48, 55, 56, 57, 59, 61
Stuart, Rosemary, 25–28, 31

T

Tabram, Martha, 42–43, 55, 56, 57, 58, 61
Tarr, Holly, 121–126
Tichnow, Lisa, 216–217
Torture murderers, *See also* Sexually sadistic murderers
  Cottingham, 65–95, *See also* Cottingham, Richard
  Pennell, 139–158, *See also* Pennell, Steven
  psychological games, 81, 93–94
  "punishment" motivations, 86, 90–91, 93
  victim feedback and sensory stimulation, 154–155
Tucker, Susan, 107–109, 112
Tuinal, 68, 77, 89–90

U

Urination obsession, 23

V

Vasquez, David, 97–98
Verbal feedback, offender stimulation and, 156
Verbal terrorization or intimidation, 77, 221
Victim display or positioning, *See* Posing
Victim entrapment methods, 65
  classified ads, 18
  dating, 69
  drugging, 67–68, 70, 89–90
Victimology, 209
Victim pre-selection, 113, 202, 209, 220
Victim's belongings disposal, 17, 19
  souvenirs or trophies, 83–84, 92, 94, 176, 208, 211
Vigil, Lorraine, 20
Violent Crime Linkage Analysis System (ViClass), 1
Violent Criminal Apprehension Program (VICAP), 1, 15, 20–21, 179–180
Virginia rape-murder cases, 97–116, *See also* Spencer, Timothy
Von Schuch, Warren, 112
Vosberg, Lynn, 215–216

W

Walsh, Barbara, 205–207, 209
Weinhold, Janene Marie, 122–124
Werner, Bruce, 78
Whitechapel murders, *See* Jack the Ripper murders
Worms, Denean, 185–189, 191

Serial Violence

Analysis of Modus Operandi and Signature Characteristics of Killers

Linking the murders of an alleged serial killer to successfully present a case in court involves a specific methodology that has been scrutinized by the judicial system but is largely absent in the current literature. ***Serial Violence: Analysis of Modus Operandi and Signature Characteristics of Killers*** fully explains the process of finding the nexus between one violent crime and another for the purpose of pursuing the same offender at trial.

Written by renowned experts, this book focuses on analyzing crimes of violence to unveil common characteristics that might prove useful in the identification, apprehension, and conviction of murderers. It begins by detailing the historical origins of modus operandi as an investigative tool. It examines murderous ritualistic behavior in a variety of cases, including William Heirens, Harvey Glatman, Morris Frampton, and Jack the Ripper. Later chapters discuss serial murders accompanied by burglary, torture, picquerism, sexual violence, sexual degradation, and a host of other behaviors.

Containing 40 color photos, this volume includes useful information for expert witnesses and portions of transcripts of original testimony. The scintillating detail and rigorous analysis presented enable those charged with solving these violent crimes to discern the types of modus operandi and ritualistic behaviors that can be linked to the same offender, helping law enforcement bring these dangerous offenders to justice.

About the Authors

Bob Keppel served on the King County homicide task force that investigated the infamous Ted Bundy and has been an expert witness on scores of serial killer signature profile cases across the United States. Along with coauthor William Birnes, Dr. Keppel worked on a United States Department of Justice grant to evaluate how local police homicide units use computer database technology to track serial killer and sexual offender cases by cross-referencing offender psychological signatures.

66323

ISBN: 978-1-4200-6632-6

90000

9 781420 066326

CRC Press
Taylor & Francis Group
an **informa** business
www.crcpress.com

6000 Broken Sound Parkway, NW
Suite 300, Boca Raton, FL 33487
270 Madison Avenue
New York, NY 10016
2 Park Square, Milton Park
Abingdon, Oxon OX14 4RN, UK

www.crcpress.com